



# The Belo Herald

Newsletter of the Col. A. H. Belo Camp #49

## July 2013 \* Vicksburg & Gettysburg Commemorative Edition

This month's meeting features a Camp Discussion:

### Race and Culture in the South: The SCV Perspective.



The Belo Herald is an interactive newsletter. Click on the links to take you directly to additional internet resources.

#### Col. A. H Belo Camp #49

- Commander - Kevin Newsom
- Adjutant - Stan Hudson
- 2<sup>nd</sup> Lt. Cmdr - Mark Brown
- Chaplain - Rev. Jerry Brown
- Editor - Nathan Bedford Forrest



Contact us: <http://belocamp.org>  
[Belocamp49@hotmail.com](mailto:Belocamp49@hotmail.com)  
<http://www.facebook.com/BeloCamp49>

Follow us on Twitter at [belocamp49scv](https://twitter.com/belocamp49scv)

Texas Division: [www.texas-scv.org](http://www.texas-scv.org)

National: [www.scv.org](http://www.scv.org)

<http://1800mydixie.com/>

<http://www.youtube.com/user/SCVORG>

Commander in Chief Givens on [Twitter](https://twitter.com/CiC@CiCSCV) at [CiC@CiCSCV](https://twitter.com/CiC@CiCSCV)

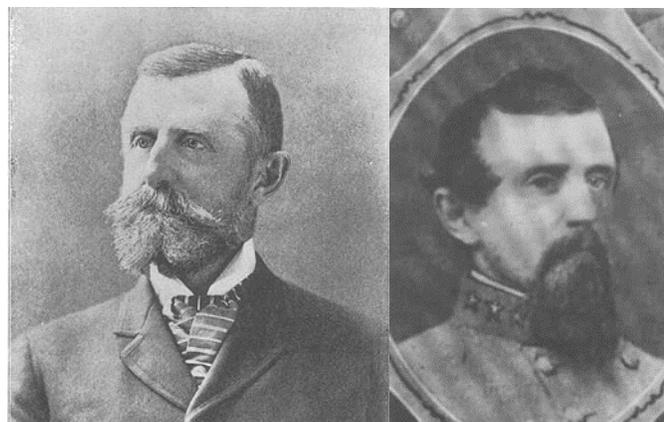
### Thursday, July 4<sup>th</sup>: 7:00 pm

#### La Madeleine Restaurant

3906 Lemmon Ave near Oak Lawn, Dallas, TX

**\*we meet in the private meeting room.**

All meetings are open to the public and guests are welcome.



**Have you paid your dues??**

Come early (6:30pm), **eat**, fellowship with other members, learn your history!





# COMMANDER'S REPORT



Compatriots,

July 2013 is the 150th anniversary of Gettysburg and The Fall of Vicksburg. I encourage you to study these two events' impact on the course of the war. And the impact of that war on our current situation.

Most Americans spend the 4th of July sitting on their duffs, getting drunk, and eating until they explode. I refuse to partake in such gladiatorial diversions. I challenge the members of this camp, as well as all others who read this, to do the same. Instead of trying to forget or distract ourselves from reality, let's instead take a good, hard look at what's going on around us.

Our next meeting features a roundtable discussion on race and culture in the South. This subject has been described as "too controversial" by some. I disagree with that wholeheartedly. Our beloved Southland has always been a patchwork of different cultures and traditions. There are noticeable differences amongst these cultures; but there are also common threads that bring these different subgroups together.

At our next meeting we'll be discussing both the differences and the common threads. All discourse will be honest; all discussion will be respectful. As always, Belo Camp is a free speech zone. We welcome everyone to come and speak their mind. Come join us on the 4th and let your voice be heard!

Kevin Newsom  
Commander  
Belo Camp 49 Dallas  
Texas SCV  
214-422-1778  
[kevin.newsom@belocamp.org](mailto:kevin.newsom@belocamp.org)





# Chaplain's Corner



## The Majority Rules.

It has been said and often repeated that, "One man and God is a majority." This is true, since God alone is a majority. God has never needed great numbers to accomplish His purpose. Consider the story of Gideon as told in the book of Judges, chapters six through eight.

The land of Israel was being oppressed by great hordes of Midianites and Amalekites. Under God's direction, Gideon sent out a call to arms throughout Israel, but only 32,000 responded. God told Gideon that it was too many, and the number was reduced to 10,000. Again, God said it was too many and ultimately reduced Gideon's force to a mere 300 men. Gideon and his small band were victorious, and the vast army of the oppressors were totally destroyed.

The point is, that without God 32,000 Israelite soldiers would not have been nearly enough. But with God, 300 was a majority, and the majority rules.

In his first letter to the church at Corinth, Paul writes, "God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty." (1 Cor. 1: 27b) Then in verse 29, he explains why: "That no flesh should glory in His presence." Again, God alone is a majority.

Today, the Sons of Confederate Veterans face many challenges. We are challenged to recruit and retain members. Something that should be a priority to each of us. We are challenged to carry out the Charge delivered to us by General S.D. Lee over a hundred years ago, which should be our defining characteristic. And this we will do. But like Gideon, we are confronted by great hordes of oppressors.

There are many who would tarnish the memory of our brave and noble Confederate fathers and deny them their honor, and who would reduce our proud Southern heritage to a legacy of shame. And perhaps as Gideon, we may wonder how we can be successful against the determined forces that beset us. But, we can succeed if we put our faith and trust in God, and seek His guidance and direction, because God is a majority, and the majority rules.



Bro. Len Patterson, Th.D  
1941-2013



**"IN ALL MY PERPLEXITIES AND DISTRESSES, THE BIBLE HAS NEVER FAILED TO GIVE ME LIGHT AND STRENGTH."**

**-GENERAL ROBERT E. LEE**



Compatriots:

I regret to inform you of the death of Edward Davis ,44, on June 14. Edward was a member of the Litchfield #132 Camp in South Carolina. He was the son of Phil Davis, Guardian Chairman Tx Div. Please keep Phil and his family in your prayers.

- Johnnie Holley, Cmdr.Tx Div



The June meeting was a “full house” with four new members inducted and an outstanding program by author and historical researcher Jonathan Davis. John Rowles, Kyle Sims, and John White were our guests. Compatriot Charles Heard and Jonathan Davis have collaborated on projects and made this outstanding program available to us.

Camp Commander Kevin Newsom proposed constitutional amendments to the Camp Constitution. These proposed amendments were designed to streamline the process and place the power with the individual members. Paul proposed changes in the proposed amendments: Under Article VI, the annual meeting should be held in November, in lieu of the December meeting, which is our Christmas Party. Also, under Article VIII, three members of the Executive Committee should constitute a quorum. The proposed amendments and the two changes in the proposed amendments passed unanimously by a vote of the members present.

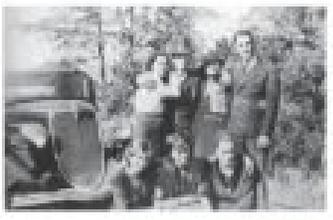
Mark Brown gave a report about the Sam Davis Youth Camp. Our future depends upon our youth, and they need to learn the truth about the causes of the war. The camp includes lessons on dancing and history and culture, as taught by speakers such as the Kennedy twins. Mark made a motion to sponsor a participant for the sum of \$250.00. Kevin seconded the motion. The motion passed unanimously by a vote of the members present.

Edward asked a question about recruiting at the national level, to which Kyle responded. Kyle stated that national provided “top-down” direction on recruiting, which was ultimately controlled by the individual States. Marc suggested that everyone pledge at least one new member during the upcoming year, in order to double our membership. Kyle suggested a contest for the person who can bring in the most members. He also stated that national will issue the “Dixie Award,” in recognition of the person who brings in at least five (5) new members. Edward suggested that we recruit our family members, who will not have problems establishing their lineage.



# BONNIE & CLYDE & MARIE:

*A Sister's Perspective  
on the Notorious Barrow Gang*



**JONATHAN DAVIS**

Jonathan Davis presented an intriguing program about Bonnie and Clyde, whose careers and activities closely paralleled those of Jesse James and Quantrill's Raiders and whose ancestors fought in the same theaters of war.

JONATHAN DAVIS was born in Evansville, Indiana. In the early autumn of 1993, he made the acquaintance of Marie Barrow when they both worked on a documentary concerning the Barrow Gang. From that time until her passing in early 1999, Marie and Jonathan worked on several Barrow-related projects, such as the manuscript and the nationally-publicized auction of Clyde's death shirt and other family items. Jonathan has also appeared on several national programs concerning Bonnie and Clyde. He currently resides in Dallas, TX.

"I had known Marie since autumn, 1993, after both of us had worked on a documentary titled Remembering Bonnie and Clyde. She brought in the "death shirt" and other items to be photographed for this program. I watched her being interviewed and was impressed by the story she had to tell. A few days afterward, I sent Marie a small thank-you card with a note telling her how much I enjoyed meeting her and that if I could ever be of assistance, she should call. I didn't expect a response, but shortly thereafter, Marie called and asked to meet with me, and thus began one of the richest and most interesting times of my life."

--Jonathan Davis



**New Member David Hendricks. David read a message that was given to him by his mother. The message was written by Isaac Avery, and the original is currently found in the North Carolina Museum of History. The message was written by Avery while he lay dying at Gettysburg. It was written by use of a stick dipped in his own blood. Col. A.H. Belo stood behind Avery as he wrote this message.**

Major  
Tell my  
Father I died  
with my  
face to the  
enemy  
I. E. Avery

Thirty-five year old Colonel Isaac Erwin Avery was the grandson of Waightstill Avery, the fiery Revolutionary War hero who served as the first attorney general of North Carolina. As General Robert F. Hoke's senior colonel, Isaac Avery was thrust in command of Hoke's brigade at Gettysburg because Hoke had been badly injured and narrowly missed losing his left arm in the fight near Chancellorsville two months earlier. As the afternoon of July 2 wore on at Gettysburg, Major General Jubal Early instructed the small brigades of Hoke and General Harry Hays of Louisiana to attack the heavily fortified enemy positions on East Cemetery Hill-then considered the most strategic position for Union General George Meade. From the hill, the Union soldiers could observe in the twilight the Confederate assault columns as they formed. Avery's three regiments moved to the right of Hays' Louisiana Tigers. During the ascent of the hill, Isaac Avery was shot and knocked from his horse; as he lay bleeding to death, he gathered enough strength to take from his coat a lead pencil and a scrap of paper. With his writing hand paralyzed, he used his left to scrawl a note which was addressed to his business partner and aide, Major Samuel McDowell Tate. Colonel Isaac Erwin Avery's dying message read: "Major: Tell my Father I died with my face to the enemy. I. E. Avery"



**Belo Camp is honoured to welcome James Echols and Shaun and Scott Stewart into our ranks.**



## Belo Camp 49 Upcoming Meetings:

August 1<sup>st</sup> – Kirt Barnett: The 48ers

September 5<sup>th</sup> – Cassie Keys: Defending Heritage through Education

October 3<sup>rd</sup> - Mark Vogl: Southern Fried Ramblings



\*\*\*\*\*

# Upcoming events

\*\*\*\*\*

**June 29<sup>th</sup>, 2013 - 4th Brigade Quarterly Meeting** scheduled at 11am. Location: El Fenix  
3450 S Central Expy In McKinney Tx. Brigade meetings are a good way to introduce one's self to the leadership structure of the SCV. It's also a nice way to better understand how things work in our organization.

**July 24-27, 2013 117<sup>th</sup> National SCV Reunion Vicksburg MS**  
[www.2013scvreunion.homestead.com](http://www.2013scvreunion.homestead.com)

**Sunday July 28<sup>th</sup> to Saturday Aug 3<sup>rd</sup> - Sam Davis Youth Camp**

At Three Mountain Retreat, 1648 FM 182, Clifton, TX 76634. The deadline for applications is Monday Jul 21, 2013.

**SEPTEMBER 7 & 8, 2013 DICK DOWLING DAYS SESQUICENTENNIAL**

SABINE PASS BATTLEGROUND STATE HISTORIC SITE <http://csa.tripod.com/reenactment.html>

**September 28, 2013** SCV National Leadership Workshop at the Sheraton 4 Points Hotel, 8818 Jones Maltsberger Rd (at intersection with Hwy 410), San Antonio, TX) On Friday September 27, a private one hour tour of the Alamo will start at 7:30 pm **SEE INFORMATION IN THIS ISSUE**

# Support Sam Davis Youth Camps!!

Send your children and grandchildren to camp.

Sunday July 28th to Saturday Aug 3<sup>rd</sup>

An adventure-filled, Christ-centered,  
week-long encampment for young folks  
in the beautiful Texas Hill Country...

# Sam Davis Youth Camp Clifton, Texas



## **Attention! Young Ladies & Gentlemen!**

The Texas Division Sam Davis Youth Camp will be held

**Sunday July 28th to Saturday August 3rd.**

Three Mountain Retreat, 1648 FM 182, Clifton, TX 76634.

**The deadline for applications is Monday Jul 21, 2013.**

The Sam Davis Youth Camp offers an adventure-filled and Christ-centered week-long encampment for youth ages 12 thru 18, in a beautiful Texas hill-country setting. Sponsored by the Texas Division of the SCV, the 2012 camp is to be scheduled soon. This annual event is comfortably hosted at the top of the Hill Country in central Texas at the beautiful Three Mountain Retreat, a scenic 260 acre privately owned Christian Conference Center near Clifton... all of which reflects the beauty of God's creation.

## **Why should your son or daughter attend the Sam Davis Youth Camp?**

In a survey conducted by the Center for Survey Research and Analysis in 2000, 65% of college seniors failed to pass a high school equivalent American history test:

Only 23% correctly identified James Madison as the "Father of the Constitution."

Yet, 98% knew that "Snoop Doggy Dog" is a rapper.

Just over half, 52% knew that George Washington's Farewell Address warned against establishing permanent alliances with foreign governments.

Yet, 99% correctly identified Beavis & Butthead.

## What to do?

Today, General Cleburne's words ring all too true. There is no question that the youth of today must run a terrible gauntlet, and that many are struck down along the way by one or more of the politically correct influences which flourish in our schools. Sometimes these youths are from the best homes, with strong families and religious training. With even the most conscientious parenting though, oftentimes in high school or college, even these best & brightest finally succumb to the liberal, politically correct view of history.

This summer, you can help turn the tide. For one week, our Southern young men and ladies (ages 12-20) will gather to hear the truths about the War for Southern Independence. This camp (named for the great young Confederate Sam Davis) will combine fun and recreation with thoughtful instruction in Southern history, the War Between the States, the theology of the South during the War, lessons on Southern heroes, examples of great men of the Faith, and special programs and sessions for our Southern ladies!

This is the eighth year the Sons of Confederate Veterans has offered such a wonderful event for our sons and grandsons, and the third year we offer the program for our daughters and granddaughters. We urge you to take advantage of this great opportunity. It is our responsibility to teach our Southern history and culture to the future generations.

## Great Activities

Morning Prayer & Devotions  
Christian Values & Education  
Motivating Guest Speakers  
Safe & Friendly Environment  
Fine Christian Fellowship  
Comfortable Accommodations  
Delicious & Nutritious Meals  
Cannon & Musket Training  
Swimming  
Scenic Hayride  
Horseback Riding  
History Classes & Field Trips  
Period Music & Dancing  
Confederate Ball & Cotillion

... the week that I spent at the SDYC was one of the most enjoyable weeks of my life! ...

I will be going back again and again.

Andrew Dixon  
Mountain View, Missouri

## 3 Easy Steps to Register!

1

Fill Out  
Registration  
Form

2

Contact  
YOUR Camp  
Commander

3

Email  
Registration  
to SCV  
Headquarters

...OR if you are unable to pay & wish to apply for a SDYC Scholarship...

Scholarship

Application  
Form

2

Contact  
YOUR Camp  
Commander

Mail-in

SDYC Registration  
Post Office Box 59  
Columbia, TN 38402

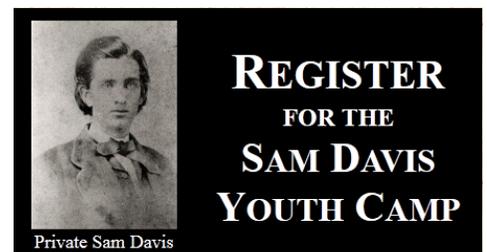
All Application Forms can be found here:  
[Application Forms](#)

Scholarships may be available thru your SCV Home Camp.

Follow us on [Facebook](#)

For more information please contact:  
The Texas Division Sam Davis Youth Camp Coordinator  
Bruce Cunningham [bvcunningham@gmail.com](mailto:bvcunningham@gmail.com)  
(940) 394-6114.

[http://scvtexas.org/Sam\\_Davis\\_Youth\\_Camp.html](http://scvtexas.org/Sam_Davis_Youth_Camp.html)



Private Sam Davis

# Southern Legal Resource Center Update



Dear Supporter,



**We have made a critical decision on Confederate Free Speech in Government Schools. The 4th Circuit, as we expected, recently turned us down in the Candice Hardwick case. This past January, we endured very hostile questioning by a 3 Judge panel in Richmond, Virginia over Candice's case. This same panel, using sophistry and completely ignoring the facts, upheld the dismissal of Candice's case. Even though the facts (agreed to by the school) showed NO instances of disruption caused by the Confederate flag while Candice was in school - NONE! No fights, no brawls, no bloody noses, no black eyes - in a school that is half black!**

No because of "the controversial nature of the flag statewide," and because of disruption 20-30 & 50 years ago, the court believed that was "sufficient" disruption to ban the flag!

Our last recourse is to the **Supreme Court of the United States** - we strongly believe we should finish what we start. Our application for a writ of Certiorari to the Supreme Court is due June 22. It will cost about \$10,000 to research, format & file.

In times of universal deceit and corruption, putting the truth under oath and on the record is a revolutionary act. Putting the hypocrisy and chicanery of the school and the court under oath and on view to any member of the interested public is a revolutionary act.

If they choose to hear us in DC - we are ready. If they choose to ignore us - we have a message ready for the American & especially Southern People.

**Help us** get Candice to the Supreme Court - this case and your children's liberty is too important not to finish. We have been fighting for Candice since 2003 - Help us finish the job.

Whatever happens will be a victory for the Southern People.

**[Donate NOW!](#)**

DEO VINDICE

Download The Latest Issue of "[The Confederate Voice](#)" Newsletter

Kirk D. Lyons  
Chief Trial Counsel, SLRC

**UPDATE:** Help Candice Get to the Supreme Court!

I just signed on the dotted line committing the SLRC (and me) to paying the \$5,000 + that it will cost to apply for a writ of certiorari to the United States Supreme Court. This is the ultimate Confederate - school free speech case, the Confederate Community will never get a better set of facts - NO disruption caused by the Confederate flag at Latta High School for 4 years - in schools that are half black! The Schools and the 4th Circuit are relying on ancient history to prove disruption. Because of the chicanery, hypocrisy and intellectual dishonesty of the 4th Circuit US Court of Appeals in its recent decision (and 5th, 6th & 8th Circuits) the US Supreme Court is where we need to be. This case has been going on since 2003, we need to finish what we commence. We need to put this rotten & dishonest school tyranny on trial. **I don't have the \$5K it is going to take, just in out of pocket expenses, to get the application for a writ filed. The SLRC & I are taking it on faith that we can raise the money before the bills become due.** Will you help us fire a shot across the bow of a corrupt school bureaucracy that is institutionally hostile to all things Confederate? This is a great opportunity to tell the Emperor he is naked. JOIN and support us today!

**Send your most generous donation to:**

SLRC  
P.O.Box 1235  
Black Mountain, NC 28711

**Please help!**

Kirk D. Lyons - Chief Trial Counsel, SLRC

**Confederate Soldiers are American Veterans by Act of Congress**

<http://www.veteranstoday.com/2011/04/14/confederate-soldiers-are-american-veterans-by-act-of-congress/>

**Sign the Petition to amend the VA's  
Next-Of-Kin Rules here:**

<http://www.marktheirgraves.org/>

More info:

# **Group Forms To Amend VA's Next-Of-Kin Rules**

(July 2013 Civil War News)

"A new organization that **aims to change a federal regulation making it difficult to get government headstones for unmarked veterans' graves** has started an online petition campaign. According to Mark Their Graves, the Department of Veterans Affairs began enforcing a rarely-used regulation last year that, in effect, shuts down its Headstones and Markers Program.

The rule – Code of Federal Regulation section 38.632-(1) – precludes veterans' groups, cemeteries, researchers and others from applying for government markers that identify the final resting places of military veterans unless they have permission from the veteran's next of kin. **"This creates an impossible and unnecessary burden for groups seeking to honor veterans who served generations ago in conflicts like the Civil War, Spanish American War and even World War I,"** says the group. Committee members ask the public to sign the petition at [www.marktheirgraves.org](http://www.marktheirgraves.org) and to contact their representatives in Washington and urge them to change the regulation.

The effort is supported by the Civil War Trust, Ohio Historical Society, New York State Civil War Sesquicentennial Committee and the North Shore Civil War Roundtable.

**Members include: Jeffrey I. Richman, Green-Wood Cemetery historian and North Shore Civil War Roundtable trustee; William Finlayson, president, Civil War Round Table of New York and North Shore Civil War Roundtable trustee; Robert MacAvoy, co-author of Our Brothers Gone Before and member, New Jersey Sesquicentennial Committee; Also, George J. Weinmann, vice president and instructor, Greenpoint Monitor Museum; Vance Ingram, president, New York State Sesquicentennial Committee and Friends of the New York State Military Museum; Andrew Athanas, president, North Shore Civil War Roundtable; And, William Styple, author, Kearny (NJ) town historian; member, New Jersey Sesquicentennial Committee and Co. E, 15th New Jersey Infantry; and Bruce L. Sirak, president, Camp Olden Civil War Round Table & Museum; member, New Jersey Sesquicentennial Committee.**

**The regulation's effect can be seen at Brooklyn's Historic Green-Wood Cemetery. In the past it successfully applied for and received 2,000 gravestones for Civil War veterans who researchers found to be in unmarked graves. Now, Green-Wood's applications are being rejected, as are those of other researchers.**

**The petition is addressed to Secretary of Veterans Affairs Eric Shinseki. It protests the redefinition of "applicant" as "next of kin" and implores the VA to limit the new regulation by "making it inapplicable to veterans who served more than 62 years ago — so that the veterans who now lie in unmarked graves can have a thankful nation mark where they lie, in tribute to their service."**

**Within one week of the Mark Their Graves launch, almost 500 people had signed the petition. At presstime it had more than 900 signers. Although Steve Muro, under secretary for memorial affairs at the Veterans Administration, on April 10 told a Congressional subcommittee "We are actually looking at that reg. And we are going to do some rewrites of it ... they made it over restrictive," the committee says pressure must be brought to bear on the VA to amend the regulation.**

**Among the veterans denied government markers because of the regulation were Civil War veterans George Stillie and William Peter Strickland. Stillie (1839-1919) served in the United States Navy aboard the USS North Carolina, USS Valley City, USS Fernandina and USS Roebuck. He is buried in Melbourne, Australia. His wife predeceased him and their only child died in New Zealand in 1912. Strickland (1809-1884), chaplain of the 48th New York Infantry for two years, believed that serving the Union was "the most sacred duty of every liberty-loving American citizen." He is interred in Green-Wood Cemetery."**



Centennial Marker Commemorates C.S.A. Camp Cooper

This Confederate Historical Marker is located in front of the Throckmorton County Courthouse, Throckmorton, Texas. It reads:

**CAMP COOPER  
C.S.A.**

**Located 17 miles south. Surrendered by U.S. at outbreak Civil War. Used as Confederate frontier outpost on the defense line from Red River to the Rio Grande. Manned by Texas Cavalry, mounted riflemen, Rangers. Constant patrol and scouting maintained guard against Indian raids, Union invasion, marauding deserters, "Jayhawkers". Always short on food, supplies, ammunition, and horses these troops fought the Comanches in numerous engagements while effectively protecting supply train and pioneer families along edge of settlement. A Memorial to Texans Who Served the Confederacy.**

**Erected by the State of Texas 1963.**

# Happy Secession Day



by Thomas J. DiLorenzo

Perhaps the best evidence of how American history was rewritten, Soviet style, in the post-1865 era is the fact that most Americans seem to be unaware that "Independence Day" was originally intended to be a celebration of the colonists' secession from the British empire. Indeed, the word secession is not even a part of the vocabulary of most Americans, who more often than not confuse it with "succession." The Revolutionary War was America's first war of secession.

America's most prominent secessionist, Thomas Jefferson, the author of the Declaration, was very clear about what he was saying: Governments derive their just powers from the consent of the governed, and whenever that consent is withdrawn, it is the right of the people to "alter or abolish" that government and "to institute a new government." The word "secession" was not a part of the American language at that time, so Jefferson used the word "separation" instead to describe the intentions of the American colonial secessionists.

The Declaration is also a states' rights document (not surprisingly, since Jefferson was the intellectual inspiration for the American states' rights political tradition). This, too, is foreign to most Americans. But read the final paragraph of the Declaration which states:

That these United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, FREE AND INDEPENDENT STATES; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British crown and that all political connection between them and the state of Great Britain is, and ought to be, totally dissolved; and that, as free and independent states, they have full power to levy war, conclude peace, contract alliances, establish commerce, and do all other things which independent states may of right do (emphasis in original).

Each colony was considered to be a free and independent state, or nation, in and of itself. There was no such thing as "the United States of America" in the minds of the founders. The independent colonies were simply united for a particular cause: seceding from the British empire. Each individual state was assumed to possess all the rights that any state possesses, even to wage war and conclude peace. Indeed, when King George III finally signed a peace treaty he signed it with all the individual American states, named one by one, and not something called "The United States of America." The "United States" as a consolidated, monopolistic government is a fiction invented by Lincoln and instituted as a matter of policy at gunpoint and at the expense of some 600,000 American lives during 1861—1865.

Jefferson defended the right of secession in his first inaugural address by declaring, "If there be any among us who would wish to dissolve this Union or to change its republican form, let them stand undisturbed as monuments of the safety with which error of opinion may be tolerated where reason is left to combat it." (In sharp contrast, in his first inaugural address, Lincoln promised an "invasion" with massive "bloodshed" (his words) of any state that failed to collect the newly-doubled federal tariff rate by seceding from the union).

Jefferson made numerous statements in defense of the defining principal of the American Revolution: the right of secession. In a January 29, 1804 letter to Dr. Joseph Priestly he wrote:

Whether we remain in one confederacy, or form into Atlantic and Mississippi confederacies, I believe not very important to the happiness of either part. Those of the western confederacy will be as much our children & descendants as those of the eastern, and I feel myself as much identified with that country, in future time, as with this; and did I now foresee a separation [i.e., secession] at some future day, yet I should feel the duty & the desire to promote the western interests as zealously as the eastern, doing all the good for both portions of our future family which should fall within my power.

In an August 12, 1803 letter to John C. Breckinridge Jefferson addressed the same issue, in light of the New England Federalists' secession movement in response to his Louisiana Purchase. If there were a "separation" into two confederacies, he wrote, "God bless them both, & keep them in the union if it be for their good, but separate them, if it be better."

So on July 4 stoke up the grill, enjoy your barbecue, and drink a toast to Mr. Jefferson and his fellow secessionists. (And beware of any Straussian nonsense about how it was really Lincoln, the greatest enemy of states' rights, including the right of secession, who taught us to "revere" the Declaration of Independence. Nothing could be further from the truth.)

July 4, 2006

[Thomas J. DiLorenzo \[send him mail\]](#) is professor of economics at Loyola College in Maryland and the author of *The Real Lincoln; Lincoln Unmasked: What You're Not Supposed To Know about Dishonest Abe and How Capitalism Saved America*. His latest book is *Hamilton's Curse: How Jefferson's Archenemy Betrayed the American Revolution — And What It Means for America Today*.

Copyright © 2006 by LewRockwell.com. Permission to reprint in whole or in part is gladly granted, provided full credit is given.

# The Fourth of July

DAILY CONSTITUTIONALIST [AUGUSTA, GA],  
**July 3, 1864, p. 2, c. 1**

The Fourth of July.

Eighty-eight years ago to-morrow our ancestors pledged their lives, their fortunes and their sacred honors to achieve the Independence of their country. The misrule and despotic policy of the mother country forced them to publish to the world the celebrated Declaration of Independence. Appealing to the God of battles and the justice of nations to aid them in the righteous cause which they advocated, it was resolved to prosecute the war to a successful termination or gloriously perish in the struggle. Valor, endurance, fortitude and patriotic self-sacrifice crowned their efforts with victory. Southern statesmanship and Southern heroism combined brought the Revolutionary over to a successful termination and achieved the Independence of the States.

The 4th of July 1864 dawns upon the people of the Southern States battling for the rights bequeathed by the men of '76. The same motive—the right of self government—that produced the Revolutionary War inaugurated the revolution of 1861, and the result will inevitably crown our arms. Harmonious action, unity of purpose, and zealous perseverance in the cause of freedom will accomplish the Independence of the Southern States just as certain as night follows day.

“For freedom’s battle once begun,  
Bequeathed from bleeding sire to son,  
Though baffled oft, is ever won.”

Reverses may befall us, and greater sacrifices may be exacted, but we must prepare to meet them, and if we are but true to ourselves and the noble examples of our forefathers, the cause of justice and freedom must triumph over that of wrong and tyranny. Already the history of our young Republic is written in blood, and its pages are resplendant [sic] with the heroic deeds of the martyred dead who have fallen in freedom’s cause. But thank God, they have not fallen in vain. The wisdom of our rulers, the sagacity and skill of our Generals, the bravery of our soldiers, and the patriotism of our people will soon be rewarded with peace and independence.

The 4th of July 1865 will, we firmly believe, dawn upon the Confederate States as one of the acknowledged powers of the earth, for we see through the smoke of battle the eagle perched on our victorious standards.

<http://thesouthernamerican.blogspot.com/>



## The Nationalist Myth and the Fourth of July

Greg Loren Durand

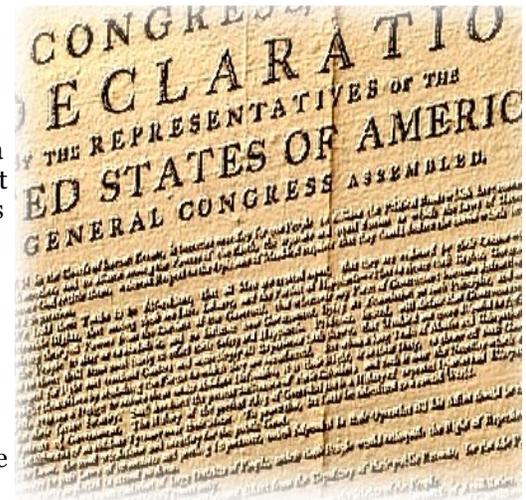
Millions of Americans will soon gather in stadiums across the country to celebrate a myth — one that has been carefully constructed over many years to elicit the highest levels of emotion and devotion, while just as carefully concealing the historical facts which undermine it. The myth: we commemorate the birth of our nation on the Fourth of July.

The truth is that there was no birth of an American nation on 4 July 1776. Instead, there was merely a joint declaration of independence of thirteen States from their former allegiance to the British Crown — an allegiance that each, while in their colonial character, owed separately, not collectively, to the King via their individual charters. The official title of this declaration was "The unanimous Declaration of the thirteen united States of America." This was a shortened form of "The unanimous Declaration of Georgia, New York, Virginia, Massachusetts, *etc.*" According to the rules of English grammar, the lower case letter in the word "united" rendered it an adjective rather than a part of the proper noun which followed, thus identifying their association with each another as one of purpose, not of a political nature. Prior to 1781, the closest the several States had ever come to establishing a common political bond between themselves was the First Continental Congress, which met briefly in Philadelphia in 1774 and consisted of delegates from twelve of the colonies (Georgia was not represented), chosen to consider an economic boycott of British trade and to petition King George III for a redress of their grievances. The Second Continental Congress was simply a reconvening of the First, for the purpose of organizing the defense of the colonies against British invasion and whose power was limited to issuing resolutions which had no legally binding authority whatsoever over any of the thirteen colonies. In fact, the resolutions of the Congress and its requests for funding for the Continental Army were frequently ignored.

Another misconception that requires correction is that the independence of the States from Great Britain is legally dated from the signing of the Declaration on 4 July 1776. However, this is an inaccurate understanding of the purpose of that document, which was merely to serve as a notice and justification to the world of what had already transpired. For example, Virginia had declared its independence and adopted a State constitution on 29 June 1776, five days before the Declaration was signed. The people of each colony, separately and for themselves alone, determined that "as Free and Independent States," they should have "full Power to levy War, conclude Peace, contract Alliances, establish Commerce, and to do all other Acts and Things which Independent States may of right do." In other words, sovereignty had passed from the King to each new State separately, and not to the thirteen States as a collective body. Consequently the allegiance of each individual man, woman, and child was now owed to their own State as its Citizens rather than to the King as his subjects. This is how patriotism was understood at that time.

The thirteen States were again separately recognized as sovereign in the Articles of Confederation of 1781, in the Treaty of Paris of 1783, and again in the Constitution of 1787, particularly in the Tenth Amendment. Calling to mind the former title of the Declaration of Independence, the original wording of the Preamble to the Constitution read, "We, the people of the States of New Hampshire, Massachusetts, Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia do ordain and establish this Constitution..." This wording was later shortened to read, "We the People of the United States," but the meaning remained the same: the Constitution was being "ordained and established" by distinct States, each acting for itself in its own sovereign capacity. This fact is clearly seen in Article VII, which states, "The ratification of the conventions of nine States, shall be sufficient for the establishment of this Constitution between the States so ratifying the same." In other words, the constitutional bond would exist only between those States ratifying it, therefore excluding the non-ratifying States from the political compact known as "The United States of America." As it turned out, two of the thirteen States — North Carolina and Rhode Island — did remain outside of the Union for several months and in the case of the latter, were treated with by the newly-established federal Government as a foreign nation during that time.

It is noteworthy that the terms "nation" and "national" do not appear in the Constitution, except when referring to foreign nations. In fact, the term "federal" was deliberately chosen by the framers over "national" to describe the government created by the Constitution, thereby defining it as the creation of the Union and the common agent of the ordaining sovereignties. The compacting States agreed to surrender certain enumerated powers to this common agent for the general welfare of all, while reserving to themselves the continued exercise of all other powers not so enumerated. One of the reserved rights of any sovereign when entering into political compact with other sovereignties is that of withdrawal should the agreement fail to answer to its purpose. We find this reserved right expressly stated in the ratifications of three of the original thirteen States — Virginia, New York, and Rhode Island — and accepted without question or objection from the other ten States. Declarations of sovereignty were also embodied in many of the State constitutions, such as that of Massachusetts, and the reserved right of secession was proclaimed numerous times throughout the first several decades



following the ratification of the Constitution by both Northern and Southern States. Thus, it is beyond dispute that the United States of America were legally a confederacy, not a nation, and were repeatedly described as such in the writings of the earliest political commentators.

The theory of a unified American nation was not popularly advanced until 1833 when Joseph Story of Massachusetts published his *Commentaries on the Constitution*. In this extensive work, Story argued that the "people of the United States" in the preamble of the Constitution referred to the "people in the aggregate," rather than the people constituting several States, and that the States were therefore dependent upon the Union for their existence. Daniel Webster, also of Massachusetts, relied on this fallacy in his congressional debate with South Carolinian Senator John C. Calhoun that same year. Calhoun so soundly refuted this theory that it nearly completely vanished from the political scene only to be resurrected thirty years later by Abraham Lincoln in his first inaugural address on 4 March 1861 and his address to Congress on 4 July 1861. In the latter speech, Lincoln declared the absurdity that "the Union created the States," rather than vice versa, and that therefore, secession by any State or States was tantamount to treason. He further expounded this theme in his celebrated Gettysburg address on 19 November 1863, wherein he dated the now-familiar idea of the "nation's birth" in 1776 and claimed that Northern soldiers had shed, and were shedding, their blood so that this imagined entity "would not perish from the earth." Finally, during the Reconstruction period, the Republican radicals in Congress admitted that the war had been fought against the Southern States to overthrow "the pernicious heresy of State sovereignty" and to consolidate forever the American people into a single nation under an all-powerful central Government.

Unreconstructed Southerners refused to observe the Fourth of July for several decades after the War Between the States because they saw it as a day of mourning rather than one of celebration. Not only had Lincoln chosen that day to deliver a virtual declaration of war against the founding principles of American constitutionalism, but it was also the anniversary of the fall of Vicksburg in the West (by which Lincoln's Government gained control of the Mississippi River, effectively cutting the Southern Confederacy in half) and of the defeat of Robert E. Lee's army at Gettysburg in the East (which marked the point of decline for Confederate military strength). Moreover, they saw the terrible irony of celebrating the independence of the original thirteen States from an oppressive central government in 1776 when their own States had just been so unjustly denied their own independence and their people subjugated to an even greater tyranny than that from which their forefathers had fought to free themselves.

That there is an American nation today is obvious; in fact, it can more accurately be described as an empire. Not only does the central Government in Washington, D.C. claim ultimate sovereignty over the American people, but it also asserts the prerogative of controlling every aspect of their lives. In addition, it seeks to militarily impose its own ideas of democracy and freedom on other nations and people around the globe. However, the question remains: just when was this modern nation born, if not in 1776? In his book entitled, *Abraham Lincoln and the Second American Revolution*, historian James M. McPherson gave the answer:

[After the war] the old decentralized federal republic became a new national polity that taxed the people directly, created an internal revenue bureau to collect these taxes, expanded the jurisdiction of federal courts, established a national currency and a national banking structure. The United States went to war in 1861 to preserve the Union; it emerged from war in 1865 having created a nation. Before 1861 the two words "United States" were generally used as a plural noun: "The United States are a republic." After 1865 the United States became a singular noun. The loose union of states became a nation (page viii).

Tyrants throughout history have understood that in order to keep a subjugated people under control, they must be cut off from their own history and provided with an alternate view of reality that is constantly reinforced through its symbols, ceremonies, and fabricated traditions. "[The conquered] must at least retain the semblance of the old forms," wrote Niccolo Machiavelli, the renowned political philosopher of the early Sixteenth Century, "so that it may seem to the people that there has been no change in the institutions, even though in fact they are entirely different from the old ones. For the great majority of mankind are satisfied with appearances, as though they were realities, and are often even more influenced by the things that seem than by those that are." Such is the power of this myth-making that the people will not only automatically react negatively against dissent from the accepted view, but they will also be willing to die, or to kill, for it. The ancient Grecian and Roman empires, and the more recent Nazi and Soviet regimes of the Twentieth Century, all relied on the power of propaganda and pageantry and are standing testimonies to the truth of Ecclesiastes 1:9: "The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun."

# SOUTHERN VIEW OF JULY 4TH, INDEPENDENCE DAY

We have no inclination to deprive that day of its just honors on which was, for the first time, effectively and solemnly enunciated - "the right of the people to alter and abolish a form of Government, deriving it's just powers from the consent of the governed." This is the principle for which we are even now contending, and which we have never violated; and, therefore, whatever associations are connected with that mid-summer day in the year of our Lord 1776, ought to be peculiarly and perpetually cherished by the citizens and citizen-soldiers of these Confederate States.

When the time and our means permit, we shall be glad to see renewed, with every return of the occasion, the bonfires and rejoicings with which it used to be celebrated, and we shall read, with hardly less pleasure than in the season of our boyhood, the familiar but ever fresh truths appropriate to the day written by the art of the pyrotechnist in letters of emerald and crimson against the dusk evening sky.

Yet while we advocate the celebration of the 4th by ourselves, **we don't know what right the Yankees have to regard it with like respect. It is one of the most remarkable proofs of their effrontery as a nation that they would dare to take the name of that day in vain. The impudence of the thing almost surpasses belief. But it is a piece of the bold hypocrisy of a people who represent themselves as the philanthropists of the world while they are engaged in a crusade of extermination against another.**

July, 1864

Henry Timrod, Southern Poet

Printed in the Charleston Mercury

*Francis Key Howard* wrote a book on his experiences as a political prisoner completed in December of 1862 and published in 1863 titled *Fourteen Months in the American Bastiles*. Howard commented on his imprisonment;

*"When I looked out in the morning, I could not help being struck by an odd and not pleasant coincidence. On that day forty-seven years before my grandfather, Mr. Francis Scott Key, then prisoner on a British ship, had witnessed the bombardment of Fort McHenry. When on the following morning the hostile fleet drew off, defeated, he wrote the song so long popular throughout the country, the Star Spangled Banner. As I stood upon the very scene of that conflict, I could not but contrast my position with his, forty-seven years before. The flag which he had then so proudly hailed, I saw waving at the same place over the victims of as vulgar and brutal a despotism as modern times have witnessed."*



President Jefferson Davis arrived in Toronto aboard the steamer Champion on May 30th, 1867, met by several thousand well-wishers at the foot of Yonge Street. He boarded the Rothesay Castle at 2PM for the journey across Lake Ontario to Niagara on the Lake. He was met there by the Town Council along with General Breckinridge and Mason.

Upon leaving the wharf, Davis looked across the river to Fort Niagara with the Stars and Stripes floating over it. He turned to his former commissioner and exclaimed:

**“Look there Mason, there is the gridiron we have been fried on.”**

## Response to article: The Great Civil War Lie By MARC-WILLIAM PALEN

Pythia writing from Denver

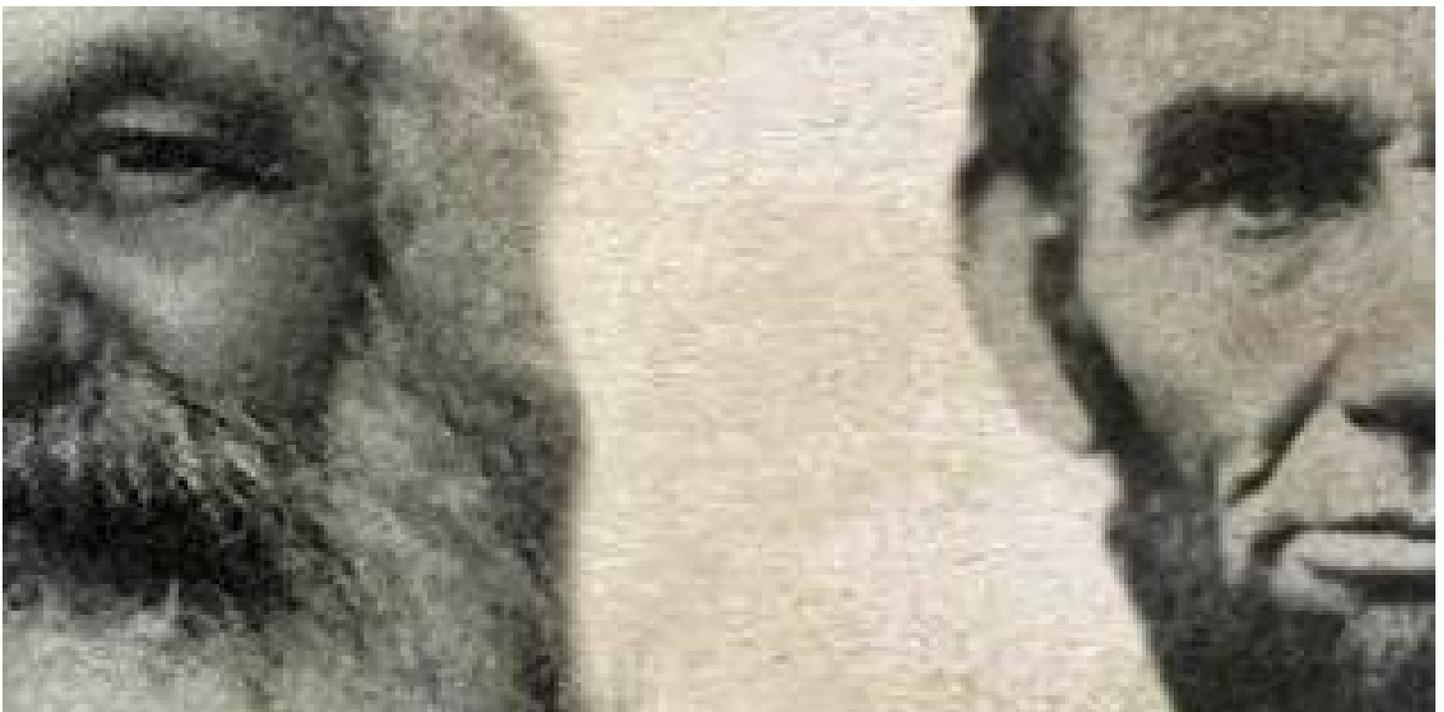
The fact that cotton was the petroleum of the 19th century appears to be news to those who prefer history told as a morality tale. Go here to get the unvarnished truth:

<http://www.cottontimes.co.uk/>

Karl Marx slyly analyzed the North American Civil War contemporaneously (writing in German newspapers) as Northern industrial capitalists foreclosing on Southern agrarian feudalists. Northern banks financed the acquisition of land and slaves and consequently held the mortgages on Southern plantations because the output of Southern plantations balanced the North's trade deficit with Europe due to the industrializing North's importation of machine tools. That's the real reason the North could not afford to let the South withdraw from the union. What's morality got to do with it, it's just business, but the bible-beating abolitionists' fervor provided a good cover story for taking control of some of the most valuable exportable-crop land in the world. Afterwards, with 750,000 dead, the imported labor headed North to work in factories (much to the dismay of European immigrants because the newly freed entrants were willing to work for less) and the Southern locals were converted to wage slaves by the conquering Northern capitalists. As for the subsequent culture that developed in the South, as the **Roman historian Tacitus observed two thousand years ago,**

**"It is only natural to hate those whom you have wronged."**

<http://opinionator.blogs.nytimes.com/2013/06/05/the-great-civil-war-lie/?src=recg>



# Words That Got a Congressman Deported

by Tom DiLorenzo - lewRockwell

Published : June 24th, 2013

Congressman Clement L. Vallandigham (D-Ohio) was the original American "whistleblower." Serving as a member of Congress from Dayton, Ohio during the War to Prevent Southern Independence, his criticisms of the Lincoln regime earned him the reputation as the leader of the Democratic opposition. The Republican Party smeared him (and all other opponents as a "copperhead" (a.k.a. snake in the grass). On May 5, 1863, sixty-seven heavily-armed soldiers broke into his home in the middle of the night and dragged him off to a military prison. This was done without any due process, as Lincoln had long ago illegally suspended the writ of Habeas Corpus. He was said to be guilty of "discouraging enlistments" in the army with his criticisms of the Lincoln regime. A military order issued in the state of Ohio declared all such speech to be illegal, and military officers were to have dictatorial powers in deciding what kind of speech would be permitted there. All of this was of course done at the direction of Abraham Lincoln.



Clement L. Vallandigham represented Butler County in Congress when the Civil War began

Lincoln apparently wanted Northerners to believe that all such critics were spies and traitors, so Congressman Vallandigham was deported to the state of Tennessee and placed in the hands of a Confederate Army commander. The Confederates considered him to be an "enemy alien" and imprisoned him in Wilmington, North Carolina for a short time. Vallandigham was released and made his way via blockade runner to Canada, where he spent the rest of the war.

The words that got Congressman Vallandigham deported are found in Speeches, Arguments, Addresses and Letters of Clement L. Vallandigham, first published in 1864 and reprinted and for sale today at Amazon.com. Vallandigham's first salvo against the Lincoln administration was a July 10, 1861 speech delivered on the floor of the U.S. House of

Representatives entitled "Executive Usurpation." In the speech he condemned Lincoln for "the wicked and hazardous experiment of calling thirty millions of people into arms among themselves, without the counsel and authority of Congress." As for Lincoln's newly-invented theory that the American union was never voluntary, and that the founding fathers supposedly understood that if any state seceded the government would have a "right" to invade that state, murder its citizens by the tens of thousands, and bomb and burn its cities and towns to a smoldering ruin (as was the policy of the Lincoln administration), Vallandigham gave the Congress a history lesson. "He [Lincoln] omits to tell us that secession and disunion had a New



Vallandigham's arrest.

England origin, and began in Massachusetts, in 1804, at the time of the Louisiana Purchase; were revived by the Hartford [Secession] Convention in 1814; and culminated during the [War of 1812] in [New Englanders] sending Commissioners to Washington, to settle the terms for a peaceable separation of New England from the other States of the Union."

Congressman Vallandigham described Lincoln's first inaugural address as having been spoken "with the forked tongue and crooked counsel of the New York politician [New York politician Thurlow Weed having been Lincoln's campaign manager], leaving thirty millions of people in doubt whether it meant peace or war." He condemned the Republican Party for opposing "all conciliation and compromise" with the Southern states, and surmised that the reason for it was "the necessities of a party in the pangs of dissolution." They wanted a war to rally the people around their disintegrating party.

But a "more compelling" cause of the war, said the Ohio congressman, was "the passage of an obscure, ill-considered, ill-digested, and unstatesmanlike high protectionist tariff act, commonly known as the 'Morrill Tariff.'" At about the same time, he noted, the Confederate government had outlawed protectionist tariffs altogether in its new Constitution. "The result was as inevitable as the laws of trade are inexorable. Trade and commerce . . . began to look South . . . Threatened thus with the loss of bot political power and wealth, or the repeal of the tariff, and, at last, of both, New England -and Pennsylvania . . . demanded, now coercion and civil war, with all its horrors . . ."

Republican Party newspapers from all throughout the North had been calling for the bombardment of Southern ports before any state seceded, and Lincoln literally threatened war and "invasion" of any state that declined to pay the newly-doubled (two days earlier) federal tariff tax in his first inaugural address. "Honest" Abe threatened war over tax collection, and kept his word.

Another hidden purpose of the war was to "overthrow the present form of Federal-republican government, and to establish a strong centralized government in its stead. Thus, Vallandigham charged that this was not just the effect of the war, but its primary objective all along. All of this was being done, he said, to "revive and restore the falling fortunes of the Republican Party."

The congressman harshly condemned Lincoln's unconstitutional, illegal, and dictatorial actions, especially the suspension of Habeas Corpus, waging war without the consent of Congress, the mass imprisonment of Northern political dissenters, censorship of the telegraph, and the shutting down of hundreds of opposition newspapers in the North. Such behavior, he said, "would have cost any English sovereign his head at any time within the last two hundred years."

Congressman Vallandigham mocked Lincoln's contention that "he is only preserving and protecting the Constitution" by destroying it. This, he said, is "the tyrant's plea." "The Constitution cannot be preserved by violating it." It was "an offense to the intelligence" of Congress for Lincoln to argue that "gross and multiplied infractions of the Constitution and usurpations of power were done by the president . . . out of pure love and devotion to the Constitution." [This of course is still part of the mantra of the neocons at the Claremont Institute, National Review, and elsewhere).

Vallandigham also understood that the Republican Party was using the war as an excuse to ram through Congress the old Hamiltonian mercantilist system of massive economic interventionism and corporate welfare. He described it as "national banks, bankrupt laws, a vast and permanent public debt, high tariffs, heavy direct taxation, enormous expenditure, gigantic and stupendous speculation . . . No more state lines, no more state governments, but a consolidated monarchy or vast centralized military despotism." In today's language all of this would be called "national greatness conservatism."

Congressman Vallandigham would continue his public criticisms of the Lincoln administration for the next two years, before finally being deported. On December 23, 1861, he informed his congressional colleagues that, just as he had predicted, a high protectionist tariff could reduce tariff revenues by diminishing trade from abroad too severely. "I predicted that the result of increasing the duties would be a great . . . diminution of the importations, and by

consequence of the revenue from customs." But that of course is always the intent of protectionist tariffs - to cut off trade and competition from abroad, not to raise prodigious amounts of revenue.

On May 8, 1862 Vallandigham returned to the floor of the House of Representatives to draw sharp distinctions between the Democratic and Republican parties, which had become virtual opposites in their announced platforms. The Democrats differed from the Republicans in that they were in favor of: "The support of liberty as against power; of the people as against their agents and servants; and of State rights as against consolidation and centralized despotism a simple government; no public debt; low taxes; no high protectionist tariff; no general system of internal improvements [i.e. corporate welfare] by the Federal authority; no National Bank; hard money for the Federal public dues; no assumption of state debts; expansion of territory; self government for the Territories . . ." Nothing could be further from the "national greatness conservatism" policies of the Lincoln administration. It is little wonder that Vallandigham was deported.

The congressman destroyed Lincoln's argument that the American union was being "saved" by war by stating on August 2, 1862 that: "The president professes to think that the Union can be restored by arms. I do not. A Union founded on consent can never be cemented by force. This is the testimony of the Fathers." On February 23, 1863, Vallandigham threw another rhetorical bomb at the administration by pointing out in another speech that the administration's conscription law "is a confession that the people of the country are against this war. It is a solemn admission . . . that they will not voluntarily consent to wage it any longer." Two weeks later, in a speech in New York City, Vallandigham was met with loud cheers when he declared that "instead of crushing out the rebellion," the "effort has been to crush out the spirit of liberty" in the Northern states.

Six weeks before his imprisonment and deportation Vallandigham made some remarks at a March 21, 1863 meeting in Hamilton, Ohio, that must have been he last straw for the Lincoln dictatorship. The dictatorship had issued yet another military "general order" (General Order Number 15) - this time one that condemned the private ownership of firearms as "unnecessary, impolitic, and dangerous" and "a violation of civil law" as defined by the military authorities then occupying Ohio. "Are we a conquered province governed by a military proconsul?", Vallandigham asked, "And has it come to this, that the Constitution is now suspended by a military General Order? "Yes" would have been the appropriate and obvious answer.

Congressman Clement L. Vallandigham was deported by the Lincoln dictatorship because every word of his eloquent critiques of their tyranny and his defenses of constitutional liberty was true. Every word and every speech disproved the false propaganda lines invented by the Republican Party to "justify" its power - that the Constitution must be first destroyed in order to save it; that the voluntary union of the founders could be "saved" by mass murdering hundreds of thousands of citizens who no longer consented to being governed by Washington, D.C.; that high tariffs, high taxes, out-of-control government spending, and stupendous public debt would cause prosperity; that corporate welfare was good for taxpayers; that a national bank run by politicians was in the public interest, etc., etc. All of these lies are still repeated ad nauseam today under the rubric of "Lincoln scholarship." It is no mere coincidence that so many of those who still repeat these hoary government propaganda tales are also busy defending the spying and prying police state.

<http://www.24hgold.com/english/news-gold-silver-words-that-got-a-congressman-deported.aspx?article=4413433670G10020&redirect=false&contributor=Tom+DiLorenzo>



# A RESPONSE BY OUR COMMANDER

To a call for the resignation of Mr. Robert Hicks by the SCV (see last month's Belo Herald P.12)

Mrs. Shroer,

Hopefully you are doing well. I recently received a copy of an email sent by one the board members of the Franklin Trust. In it, a **Mr. Robert Hicks calls members of the Sons of Confederate Veterans "scum of the earth" and "losers".**

Normally I take this kind of ignoramus with a grain of salt. People who don't know what they speak of often say the funniest things! However, the position of this particular man requires a response.

The people that this man calls scum are some of the best folks I have ever met. Many of them are veterans of the US armed forces, and fought hard to protect Mr Hicks' ability to call names and denigrate them. The SCV membership are also teachers, preachers, law enforcement, musicians, lawyers, and countless other people that you see in your community every day. And quite frankly, they deserve better.

It's disturbing that somebody so hostile to descendants of Confederate soldiers is on a board of trustees that allegedly protects a Confederate battlefield. It's even more disturbing that these comments come in the context of Christian brotherly love...and on the heels of a major investigation of mismanagement by your board.

Most people would ask you and Mr. Hicks to resign. I suspect that is the best course of action...but would prefer you take an alternative route. What I ask is that you have Mr. Hicks make a public statement of his view that SCV men are nothing but sub-human loser scum and stand with him as he says it. Then we all will know exactly where everyone stands on the subject...and proceed from a place of clarity.

Sincerely,

Kevin Newsom  
Commander  
Belo Camp 49 Dallas  
Texas SCV  
214-422-1778  
[kevin.newsom@belocamp.org](mailto:kevin.newsom@belocamp.org)

**"...They tried to make my uncle Harrison into an informer, but he wouldn't do it. He was only a boy... They tried to hang him, time and again they tried it, 'stretching his neck', they called it, but he didn't say anything. I think he'd have died before he'd said anything. He's the one I'm named after, and I'm happy to say that there were people...around at the time who said I took after him."**

Harry Truman speaking about what the Yankee Kansas "Red Legs" did to his 13 year old uncle, during the War Of Northern Aggression. Harry's momma wouldn't let him in the house wearing his blue dress uniform during WW I...

~Robert Mestas~



Photo: Harry S. Truman, the future U.S. President, in his Missouri National Guard Uniform, in 1912.



**The USS Columbia (CL-56) flew a Confederate Navy Ensign as a battle flag throughout combat in the South Pacific in World War II. This was done in honor of Columbia, the ship's namesake and the capital city of South Carolina, the first state to secede from the Union. Some soldiers carried Confederate flags into battle. After the Battle of Okinawa a Confederate flag was raised over Shuri Castle by a Marine from the self-styled "Rebel Company" (Company A of the 1st Battalion, 5th Marines).**

**A Japanese Kamikaze hit the ship at 1729 hrs on 6 January 1945, during the Lingayen Gulf operation. The impact, on the main deck by the after gun turret, with the resulting explosion and fire, caused extensive damage and casualties.**

**Southern men and women have always answered the call, from 1776 to today...who will deny them the right to their heritage and their flag?**

**~Robert Mestas~**

# SCV National Leadership Workshop

As we move through the challenging years of the Sesquicentennial, leadership training has become even more important to the defense of our Southern heritage. In an effort to insure that our members better understand the challenges of leadership roles and to aid our leaders in acquiring the knowledge to better perform their duties, the SCV has scheduled an Autumn National Leadership Workshop.

This year's event will be held September 28, 2013 at the Sheraton 4 Points Hotel, 8818 Jones Maltzberger Rd (at intersection with Hwy 410), San Antonio, TX. It will be hosted by the Alamo City Guards Camp 1325. A tentative schedule for the day is posted below along with registration and lodging information.

Please note that this event will include relevant presentations and individual workshops for more specialized training for Commanders and Adjutants; however, ALL members are invited to attend!

---

8:30 – 8:40	Welcome & SCV Protocol	Cmdr. Russ Lane, Camp 1325
8:40 – 8:55	Introductions & Overview	Lt. CIC Charles Kelly Barrow
8:55 – 9:40	Commanders & Command	CIC R. Michael Givens
9:40 – 9:50	<i>BREAK</i>	
9:50 – 10:30	Adjutants & Administration	AIC Stephen Lee Ritchie
10:30 -10:45	<i>BREAK</i>	
10:45 – 11:30	Recruiting & Retention	Lt. CIC Charles Kelly Barrow
11:30 – 12:30	<i>DINNER</i>	
12:30 – 1:15	<i>Vision 2016</i>	Past Chief of HD Tom Hiter, Ph.D
1:15 – 1:25	<i>BREAK</i>	
1:25 – 2:10	Camp Operations & Success	Lt. CIC Charles Kelly Barrow
2:10 – 2:20	<i>BREAK</i>	
2:20 – 3:05	Commander's & Adjutant's Workshops	CIC, Lt. CIC & AIC
3:05	Concluding Remarks & Discussion Benediction	Lt. CIC Charles Kelly Barrow

Registration, which includes dinner, is **only \$20 each** and will be handled through our General Headquarters at Elm Springs. You may mail a reservation with a check or call 1 (800) 380-1896 ext 209 (Cindy) or email [accounting@scv.org](mailto:accounting@scv.org) with credit card information (MC, VISA or AMEX).

---

Call Hotel at 210-348-9960 Group Rate: SCV (Room price is \$94 which includes breakfast buffet for one). Room reservations need to be booked before Sept 5.

On Friday September 27 a **private one hour tour of the Alamo** will start at 7:30 pm and the cost is \$5.00. If you plan go on the tour, please meet at the historic Main Bar at the Menger Hotel (across street from the Alamo) at 6:30 pm. The cost for parking is \$10.00

After the workshop on Saturday, a visit to the Confederate Cemetery and the burial places of Col. Rip Ford and General Hamilton Bee will begin at 6 pm

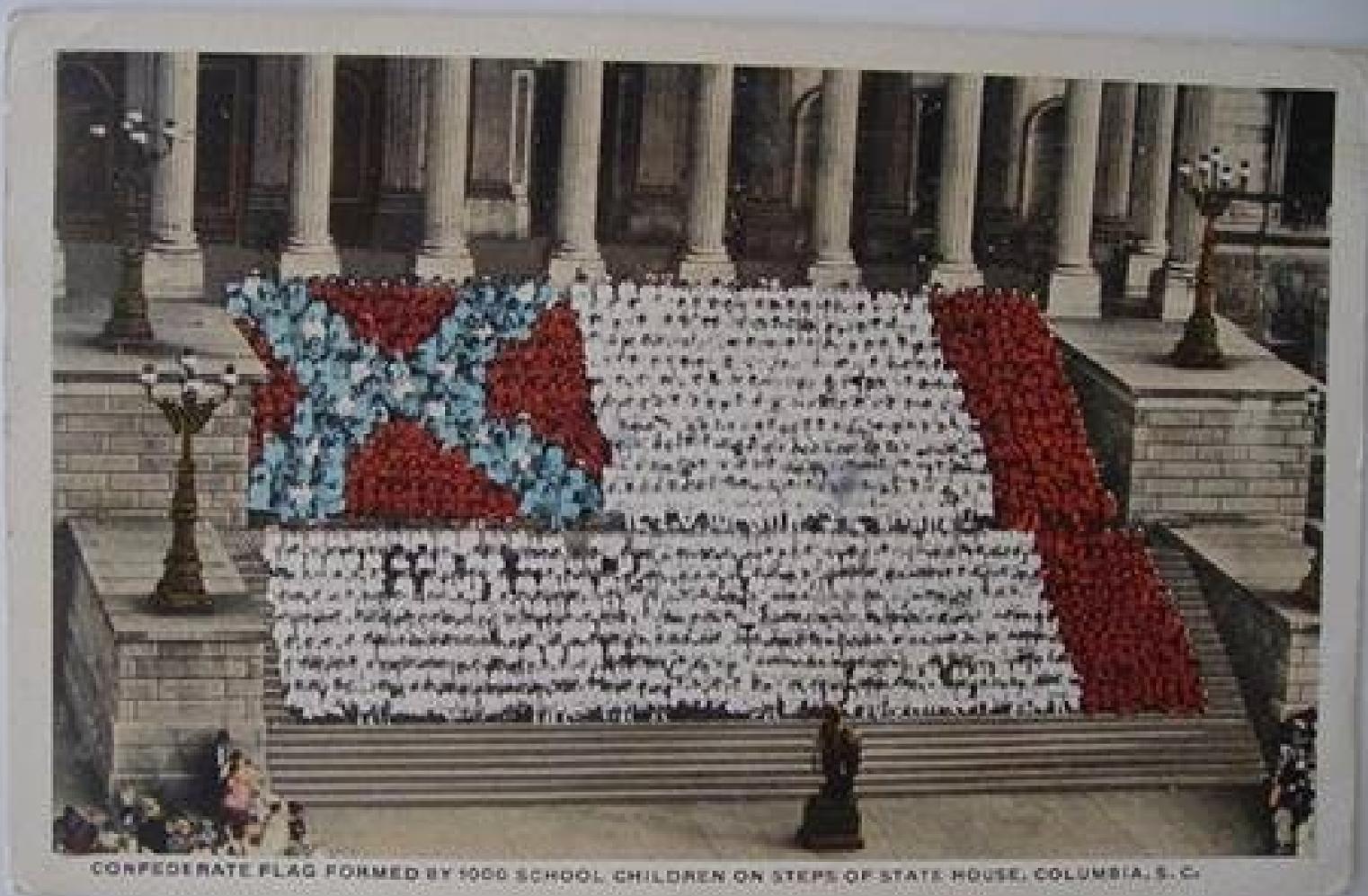
## Registration Sheet

Name \_\_\_\_\_ Address \_\_\_\_\_

\_\_\_\_\_ Email address \_\_\_\_\_

Camp number \_\_\_\_\_ Check enclosed ( ) or

Credit Card (MC, VISA, or AMEX) Number \_\_\_\_\_ Expires \_\_\_\_\_



### [Defending the Heritage](#)

This Post Card is Post Marked 1915...One thousand School Children Gather on the Steps of the South Carolina Capitol in Columbia to Honor and Remember Our Confederate History....

***How is it*** that this, Once Common Knowledge, has been So Successfully **Purged** from the Southern Conscience?

**Send your kids to SAM DAVIS YOUTH CAMPS !!!**

<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=dVzzCMIzaL4>

<https://www.facebook.com/pages/SCV-Sam-Davis-Youth-Camp-Texas/216704998474>



# Beauvoir celebrates dedication of Jefferson Davis presidential library

*Posted: Jun 03, 2013 1:38 PM CDT Updated: Jun 04, 2013 5:51 AM CDT*

By Steve Phillips - [bio](#) | [email](#)

**Watch Video** [HERE](#)

BILOXI, MS (WLOX) -

The historic ceremony at Beauvoir Monday morning was part ribbon-cutting and part birthday celebration. The day, which marks the birth of Jefferson Davis, is now also the day the new presidential library was dedicated.

Monday morning's library dedication followed a weekend of special events and celebration at Beauvoir.

Katrina heavily damaged the library building which first opened in 1998. Its replacement, described as an architectural wonder, is now ready to help educate visitors about Jefferson Davis and confederate soldiers.

Confederate soldiers presented the colors, while other re-enactors looked on. Bertram Hayes-Davis told the crowd his great, great grandfather was no doubt looking down and smiling.

"A day that we never thought would happen after Katrina. But we always had hope. Hope leads to vision, vision leads to action, and action leads to what you see behind us," said Davis, who serves as executive director at Beauvoir.



Southern pride was celebrated throughout the dedication. The leader of the Mississippi division of the Sons of the Confederacy said confederate ancestors face "assaults on our heritage."

"We are accused of being revisionists. Yet, I say to you here today, it is not us who try to revise history, to try and make it fit our agenda for the purpose of controlling the minds of the nation. But rather it is them," said Alan Palmer, leader of the Sons of the Confederacy Mississippi Division.

Following the canon fire and ribbon cutting, the public got its first look inside the expansive, impressive facility.

Alexis Saucier and her niece were among the admiring crowd.

"I think it's amazing. I think it's beautiful. It's a great thing to have here, a great landmark for people to learn more about Jefferson Davis and the Confederate army," said the Petal resident.

Library Director Nedra Galloway was happy to welcome the visitors though the library remains a "work in progress" early review are encouraging.

"Excited. Thinking it's a great facility. It's a beautiful, beautiful building," said Galloway.

The beautiful building will also serve to educate future generations. As Bertram Hayes-Davis put it: Jefferson Davis was much more than one sentence in a history book.

The Sons of the Confederacy speaker summed it up nicely.

"There must be at least one place left where a person can go and hear and learn the true history of the confederate soldier, Jefferson Davis, and the Confederacy itself," said Palmer.

Bertram Hayes-Davis told visitors to expect another ceremony a little later this summer, when the Varina Davis Garden will be dedicated.

# CIVIL WAR OP-ED:

## Jefferson Davis still remembered in Dixie

Tuesday, May 28, 2013 - 09:39 By Calvin E. Johnson Jr.



When was the last time you visited Stone Mountain Park with the world famous carving of legendary Americans: Jefferson Davis, Robert E. Lee and Stonewall Jackson or beautiful Hollywood Cemetery in Richmond, Virginia where Jefferson Davis is buried?

The Jefferson Davis Presidential Library will be officially dedicated on his birthday Monday, June 3, 2013 at "Beauvoir" Davis' last home on the Mississippi Gulf Coast in Biloxi. [Read more at: http://www.beauvoir.org/events/index.html](http://www.beauvoir.org/events/index.html)

You have probably heard about or seen the movie "Lincoln" which was produced and Directed by famed film Director Steven Spielberg in 2012. The movie has been called superb and did have an excellent cast that included veteran actors

Tommy Lee Jones and Sally Field.

### Jefferson Davis

Hollywood has produced movies about Abraham Lincoln, some good, some bad and others forgettable like "Abraham Lincoln: Vampire Hunter" but I do not remember any made about the life and times of Jefferson Davis. Polls reflect the Southern people's equal admiration for Jefferson Davis and Abraham Lincoln but....

During these "political correct" times Southerners are often depicted on TV and in the movies as backward and dumb. The truth is that the South is the birth place of many intelligent, well-spoken and patriotic people like that of Jefferson Davis who was a great orator and there was standing room only on the floors of the United States Senate when he delivered his February 9, 1861 resignation speech as Mississippi Senator.

Mr. Spielberg, would you direct and produce a movie about Jefferson Davis who like Lincoln was born in the State of Kentucky?

The time is long overdue for school teachers throughout this nation to teach not only the historical facts about Abraham Lincoln, but also those about Jefferson Davis.

Jefferson Davis -- like many Southerners -- was against secession but recognized the sovereignty of each state of the Union and their Constitutional right to secede.

Jefferson Finis Davis was born on June 3, 1808, in Christian County, Kentucky. Davis who would become the first and only President of the Confederate States of America. He was a strong Unionist and a strong defender of the United States Constitution.

Here are a few of his many accomplishments:

- Graduate of West Point Military Academy
- Fought valiantly in the War with Mexico
- United States Senator
- Secretary of War under President Franklin Pierce
- First to suggest the transcontinental railroad to link the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans
- First to suggest the Panama Canal Zone
- Suggested the purchase of Cuba
- Appointed Robert E. Lee Superintendent of West Point Military Academy

Jefferson Davis' last marriage was a good one to Varina, who gave her husband four sons and two daughters (Billy, Joseph, Jefferson, Samuel, Margaret and Winnie). Joseph was killed by an accidental fall at the Confederate White House in Richmond, Virginia in 1864, Samuel died at age 2 and an abused black child named Jim Limber was virtually adopted as a member of the Davis family.

In 1865, Jim was forcibly removed by Union soldiers and never seen again. It is said that the Davis children were crying at the scene and poor Jim was kicking and not making it easy for his abductors. After the War Between the States, Jefferson Davis tried to locate the whereabouts of Jim Limber, but was not successful.

The funeral for Jefferson Davis was attended by thousands of mourners. Milo Cooper, a former servant, traveled all the way from Florida to pay his last respects. It is written that, upon entering Davis' sick room, Cooper burst into tears and threw himself on his knees in prayer that God would spare the life of his old master and bless Davis family. Davis is buried at Hollywood Cemetery in Richmond, Virginia.

The Jefferson Davis Monument State Historic Site is a [Kentucky State Park](#) preserving the birthplace of [Jefferson Davis](#), the president of the [Confederate States of America](#). It is located in [Fairview, Kentucky](#), in [Todd County](#).

God bless America's Heroes of yesterday and today!

*Johnson is a speaker, writer of short stories, author of book "When America stood for God, Family and Country" and Chairman of the National and Georgia Division Sons of Confederate Veterans Confederate History and Heritage Month committee.*

<http://www.facebook.com/ConfederateHeritageMonth>

1064 West Mill Drive, Kennesaw, Georgia 30152, Phone 770 330 9792 or 770 428 0978.

<http://www.huntingtonnews.net/63637>

# Confederate flags banned from City Cemetery in Jacksonville



By Teresa Sardina  
May 23, 2013 7:16 p.m.

**Tyler, TX –**

For Memorial Day, the Marine Corps League in Jacksonville planned to honor confederate veterans at the City Cemetery.

They wanted to place confederate flags on graves of those who fought for the confederacy, but it's become an issue.



The Marine League argues confederate veterans are considered American War Veterans.

They say there are more than 150 confederate veterans here and they want to honor them.

"We were placing out the flags that there was quite a few confederate graves," says Charles 'Chuck' Bones.

They were to be placed on graves which had confederate emblems on them.

"Furnished by our Government, that says CSA, Confederate states of America," says Stephen Hutson.

"Once we noticed that, I researched to see what we could do honor those veterans," says Charles 'Chuck' Bones.

He says the U.S. has a law to honor all U.S. Veterans which includes confederate soldiers.

The response they're getting from city officials is the 'Rebel Flag' is too controversial, so the city is saying no.

For some the confederate flag symbolizes racism, hatred and slavery.

"The confederate flag to me and a lot of other people symbolizes freedom and freedom from tyranny of Northern states of the time that tried to impose taxes excess taxes on the cotton sales," says Charles 'Chuck' Bones.

Bones says, the flag symbolizes the Southern states being against the U.S. because of the taxes.

He says, we had slaves in the North and South and someone spun this into a controversial subject.

"It doesn't matter if it was a confederate veteran or a Northern Veteran, they're still entitled to the same respect as any other veteran as a veteran of WWI, WWII, etc.," says Stephen Hutson.

KETK contacted The City of Jacksonville officials but they were unavailable to comment.

<http://m.ketknbc.com/w/main/story/92177992/>

# Monument to confederate soldiers dedicated Saturday

PHOTO / KEVIN KERR

A wreath is laid Saturday at the base of the newly dedicated monument in Rose Hill Cemetery for confederate soldiers.

The South rose again, if only for a few hours Saturday, when officials, dignitaries, honored guests and proud Confederate descendants helped dedicate a monument to remember confederate soldiers in Rose Hill Cemetery.

Between 150 and 200 people were on hand for the dedication, which lasted nearly two hours. Larry Logan, Division Commander for the Oklahoma Sons of the Confederacy, spoke passionately about what it means to now have the monument in place in Ardmore.



"To be a confederate descendant is something special," he said. "We're stereotyped as so different from what we are."

The soldiers buried in the Confederate section of Rose Hill Cemetery vary from where their home state was. During the Civil War, Oklahoma wasn't yet a state. However, many confederate troops were assembled with many of the Native American tribes who supported some southern ideals and way of life.

In all, there are 190 soldiers buried in the Confederate section of Rose Hill Cemetery, 10 from the Indian Territory.

James Catron, #149 Commander in Ardmore, said many other communities with ties to the Confederacy already have monuments, but Ardmore's Daughters of the Confederacy built a home — now the Veterans Center — for the confederate soldiers and their widows to live in.

"Far more valuable to those confederate veterans than a statue," Catron said.

But now, those confederate soldiers can be remembered appropriately with the monument.

"The home was so special to the State of Oklahoma, but now to have this — almost 100 years after some of these men died — is fantastic," Logan said.

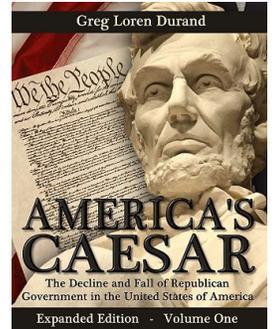
<http://www.ardmoreite.com/article/20130623/NEWS/130629911>

Purchase this outstanding book [here](#).



## A Series.....

Belo Herald is proud to present AMERICA'S CAESAR. Each month, a new chapter of this excellent treatise will be presented. This benchmark work can be purchased at the link above. It is a must for every Southron to own.



# CHAPTER SIX: Racial Attitudes in the North and South

## Free Soil Antagonism to the Negro Race

In thus presenting a sketch of the progress of those causes which led to the Southern revolt, it will be seen that slavery, though made an occasion, was not, in reality, the cause of the war. Antislavery was of no serious consequence, and had no positive influence, until politicians, at a late period, seized upon it as an instrument of agitation; and they could not have done so to any mischievous effect, except for an alleged diversity of interests between the sections, involving the question of political power. Wise and patriotic citizens for a long time kept those interests at the proper balance, or the passions which were thus stimulated under just control. As those great men passed away, self-seeking and ambitious demagogues, the pest of republics, disturbed the equilibrium, and were able, at length, to plunge the country into that worst of all public calamities, civil war. The question of morals had as little as possible to do with the result. Philanthropy might have sighed, and fanaticism have howled for centuries in vain, but for the hope of office and the desire of public plunder, on the part of men who were neither philanthropists nor fanatics.<sup>(1)</sup>

It is preposterous to suggest that "hundreds of thousands of lives" were expended in the so-called "Civil War" to overturn Chief Justice Taney's decision in *Dred Scott v. Sandford* regarding the political status of American Blacks. In fact, one is hard-pressed to find many Northern spokesmen – even among the most ardent Abolitionists – attempting to dispute the non-citizenship of the Negro. This is because securing the Territories for free White labor, and not citizenship for Negroes, was always the real issue in the minds of the Free-Soilers and the later Republicans. The Free Soil argument was that the presence of slavery was an embarrassment to American democracy and that it impeded the "manifest destiny" of the United States to extend a great economic empire of White freedom across the continent and throughout the world. In relating why all future Territories should be closed to slavery and why California should be admitted as a free State, David Wilmot, author of the aforementioned *Wilmot Proviso*, said: "The negro race already occupy enough of this fair continent. Let us keep what remains for ourselves, and our children – for the emigrant that seeks our shores – for the poor man, that wealth shall oppress – for the free white laborer, who shall desire to hew him out a home of happiness and peace, on the distant shores of the mighty Pacific."<sup>(2)</sup> Such was the substance of a three-hour speech in Congress in 1850 delivered by William H. Seward, who was also a member of the Free Soil party, and who would later serve in Lincoln's presidential cabinet as Secretary of State:

The population of the United States consists of natives of Caucasian origin, and exotics of the same derivation. The native mass readily assimilates to itself and absorbs the exotic, and these constitute one homogenous people. The African race, bond and free, and the aborigines, savage and civilised, being incapable of such assimilation and absorption, remain distinct, and, owing to their peculiar condition, constitute inferior masses, and may be regarded as accidental if not disturbing political forces. The ruling

homogenous family, planted at first on the Atlantic shore, and following an obvious law, is seen rapidly and continually spreading itself westward, year by year, subduing the wilderness and the prairie, and thus extending this great political community, which, as fast as it advances, breaks into distinct States for municipal purposes only, while the whole constitutes one entire, contiguous, and compact nation.<sup>(3)</sup>

It is clear that Seward did not view the Negro, whether slave or free, to be a part of this "great political community" which he foresaw spreading itself across the continent. In his "Irrepressible Conflict" speech, delivered at Rochester, New York on 25 October 1858, Seward stated, "The interests of the white race demand the ultimate emancipation of all men. The white man needs this continent to labor upon.... He must and will have it."<sup>(4)</sup> Two years later, his views had not changed: "The great fact is now fully realized that the African race here is a foreign and feeble element, like the Indians, incapable of assimilation,... and that it is a pitiful exotic, unwisely and unnecessarily transplanted into our fields, and which it is unprofitable to cultivate at the cost of the desolation of the native vineyard."<sup>(5)</sup> According to Republican Senator Benjamin Wade of Ohio, the solution to the "Negro problem" was therefore not only the abolition of slavery, but the removal of the Negro race entirely from the country:

The Senator from Illinois [Douglas] and my colleague [Pugh] have said that we Black Republicans were advocates of negro equality, and that we wanted to build up a black government. Sir, it will be one of the most blessed ideas of the times, if it shall come to this, that we will make inducements to every free black among us to find his home in a more congenial climate in Central America or Lower Mexico, and we will be divested of every one of them; and then, endowed with the splendid domain that we shall get, we will adopt a homestead policy, and we will invite the poor, the destitute, industrious white man from every clime under heaven, to come in here and make his fortune. So, sir, we will build up a nation, renovated by this process, of white laboring men.<sup>(6)</sup>

### Abraham Lincoln's Views Regarding the Negro

Modern readers may be prone to misinterpret Lincoln's frequent attacks on the "slave dynasty" as an expression of an opposition to slavery on moral grounds, but such is not the case. As noted by Roy Basler, Lincoln "barely mentioned slavery before 1854"<sup>(7)</sup> – the year that the Republican party was born. There were other issues to which Lincoln was vastly more committed than a mere opposition to slavery, and the latter was clearly viewed by him as a means to an end. From the beginning of his political career until his death, Lincoln was "always a Whig in politics"<sup>(8)</sup> and therefore had "an unswerving fidelity to the party of Henry Clay and to Clay's American System, the program of internal improvements, protective tariffs, and centralized banking."<sup>(9)</sup> While campaigning for the State legislature in 1832, he said, "My politics can be briefly stated. I am in favor of the internal improvement system and a high protective tariff. These are my sentiments and political principles."<sup>(10)</sup> Throughout the 1840s and 1850s, he consistently opposed the advocates of free-trade – most of whom were Southern Democrats – and "made more speeches on that subject [the protective tariff] than any other."<sup>(11)</sup> "Honest Abe" was nominated for the Presidency in 1860, not because of any personal antipathy to slavery, but because he was considered "a stout champion of protection"<sup>(12)</sup> by Northern industrial interests who saw in the Republican party the prospect of a return to their former favored status of the late 1820s and early 1830s. In fact, the tariff plank had been added to the Chicago platform nearly exclusively to cater to Pennsylvania, without whose support Lincoln would never have been elected.<sup>(13)</sup> As pointed out by the Philadelphia *North American*: "The people have elected Abraham Lincoln President of the United States.... Pennsylvania, particularly, demanded that the principle of protecting American industries should be recognized and avowed.... [S]lavery was not the dominating idea of the Presidential contest, as has been assumed...."<sup>(14)</sup> A similar statement appeared in the Philadelphia *Public Ledger*: "The most potent influence that caused many Northern men to aid the Republican party was the tariff question. Manufacturers and miners believed the Democratic party prejudiced to their protection; and therefore had gone over to the Republicans."<sup>(15)</sup>

Lincoln's political worldview, which "tied economic development to strong centralized national authority,"<sup>(16)</sup> was nothing less than the old Federalism of Alexander Hamilton in a new form. It is in this economic context that his opposition to the alleged expansion of slavery into the Territories must be understood. Responding to Lincoln's famous "House Divided" speech of 16 June 1858, Stephen Douglas said:

...Mr. Lincoln asserts, as a fundamental principle of this government, that there must be uniformity in the local laws and domestic institutions of each and all the States of the Union; and he therefore invites all the non-slaveholding States to band together, organize as one body, and make war upon slavery in Kentucky, upon slavery in Virginia, upon the Carolinas, upon slavery in all of the slaveholding States in this Union, and to persevere in that war until it shall be exterminated. He then notifies the slaveholding States to stand together as a unit and make an aggressive war upon the Free States of this Union with a view of establishing slavery in them all; of forcing it upon Illinois, of forcing it upon New York, upon New England, and upon every other Free State, and that they shall keep up the warfare until it has been formally established in them all. In other words, Mr. Lincoln advocates boldly and clearly a war of sections, a war of the North against the South, of the Free States against the Slave States, – a war of extermination, – to be continued relentlessly until the one or the other shall be subdued, and all the States shall either become free or become slave....

The framers of the *Constitution* well understood that each locality, having separate and distinct interests, required separate and distinct laws, domestic institutions, and police regulations adapted to its own wants and its own condition; and they acted on the presumption, also, that these laws and institutions would be as diversified and as dissimilar as the States would be numerous,

and that no two would be precisely alike, because the interests of no two would be precisely the same. Hence I assert that the great fundamental principle which underlies our complex system of State and Federal Governments contemplated diversity and dissimilarity in the local institutions and domestic affairs of each and every State then in the Union, or thereafter to be admitted into the confederacy. I therefore conceive that my friend, Mr. Lincoln, has totally misapprehended the great principles upon which our government rests. Uniformity in local and domestic affairs would be destructive of State rights, of State sovereignty, of personal liberty and personal freedom. Uniformity is the parent of despotism the world over, not only in politics, but in religion. Wherever the doctrine of uniformity is proclaimed, that all the States must be free or all slave, that all labor must be white or all black, that all the citizens of the different States must have the same privileges or be governed by the same regulations, you have destroyed the greatest safeguard which our institutions have thrown around the rights of the citizen.

How could this uniformity be accomplished, if it was desirable and possible? There is but one mode in which it could be obtained, and that must be by abolishing the State Legislatures, blotting out State sovereignty, merging the rights and sovereignty of the States in one consolidated empire, and vesting Congress with the plenary power to make all the police regulations, domestic and local laws, uniform throughout the limits of the Republic. When you shall have done this, you will have uniformity. Then the States will all be slave or all be free; then negroes will vote everywhere or nowhere; then you will have a Maine liquor law in every State or none; then you will have uniformity in all things local and domestic, by the authority of the Federal Government. But when you attain that uniformity, you will have converted these thirty-two sovereign, independent States into one consolidated empire, with the uniformity of disposition reigning triumphant throughout the length and breadth of the land. <sup>(17)</sup>

A month later, Douglas added:

Mr. Lincoln and myself differ radically and totally on the fundamental principles of this Government. He goes for consolidation, for uniformity in our local institutions, for blotting out State rights and State sovereignty, and consolidating all the power in the Federal Government, for converting these thirty-two sovereign States into one Empire, and making uniformity throughout the length and breadth of the land. On the other hand, I go for maintaining the authority of the Federal Government within the limits marked out by the *Constitution*, and then for maintaining and preserving the sovereignty of each and all of the States of the Union, in order that each State may regulate and adopt its own local institutions in its own way, without interference from any power whatsoever. Thus you find there is a distinct issue of principles — principles irreconcilable — between Mr. Lincoln and myself. He goes for consolidation and uniformity in our Government. I go for maintaining the confederation of the sovereign States under the *Constitution*, as our fathers made it, leaving each State at liberty to manage its own affairs and own internal institutions. <sup>(18)</sup>

Dominated by the old Jeffersonian republicanism, which stressed the nature of the Union as a compact between sovereign States, <sup>(19)</sup> and committed to the philosophy of free trade and anti-protectionism, <sup>(20)</sup> the South as a section traditionally stood in the way of this consolidationist agenda. In the mind of Lincoln and other former Whigs who formed the backbone of the new Republican party, it was therefore imperative that Southern political power be minimized and contained. Lincoln was willing that slavery as an existing institution should be left unmolested and he was strongly in favor of enforcing the fugitive slave laws: "When [Southerners] remind us of their constitutional rights, I acknowledge them, not grudgingly, but fully and fairly; and I would give them any legislation for the reclaiming of their fugitives.... I have no purpose, directly or indirectly, to interfere with the institution of slavery in the States where it exists. I believe I have no lawful right to do so, and I have no inclination to do so." <sup>(21)</sup> On another occasion, he said, "[A]ll the States have the right to do exactly as they please about their domestic relations, including that of slavery...." However, he was adamant upon "restricting it from the new Territories," <sup>(22)</sup> thus making it impossible for additional slave States to be admitted to the Union.

The subject of the tariff, and its important role in bringing on the War Between the States, will be discussed in further detail in a later chapter. It is sufficient to note at present that Lincoln's real concern was for pushing his political agenda, not for the alleged plight of the Southern Negro. In fact, his public statements regarding that race revealed his views to be no different than that of Free-Soilism, which sought to confine the Negroes to the South so as not to compete with White labor in the Territories:

What I insist upon is, that the new Territories shall be kept free from [slavery] while in the territorial condition. Judge Douglas assumes that we have no interest in them — that we have no right whatever to interfere. I think we have some interest. I think that as white men we have.... Now irrespective of the moral aspect of this question as to whether there is a right or wrong in enslaving a negro, I am still in favor of our new Territories being in such a condition that white men may find a home — may find some spot where they can better their condition — where they can settle upon new soil and better their condition in life. I am in favor of this not merely (I must say it here as I have elsewhere) for our own people who are born amongst us, but as an outlet for *free white people* every where, the world over [emphasis in original]. <sup>(23)</sup>

In an address delivered at Springfield, Illinois on 26 June 1857, Lincoln openly declared himself in favor of racial segregation and the eventual deportation of the Blacks back to their native Africa:

A separation of the races is the only perfect preventive of amalgamation, but as immediate separation is impossible, the next best thing is to keep them apart where they are not already together.... Such separation, if ever affected at all, must be affected by colonization.... The enterprise is a difficult one, but "where there is a will there is a way"; and what colonization needs now is a hearty will. Will springs from the two elements of moral sense and self-interest. Let us be brought to believe it is morally right, and at the same time, favorable to, or at least not against, our interest, to transfer the African to his native clime, and we shall find a way to do it, however great the task may be. <sup>(24)</sup>

This was not an isolated statement on Lincoln's part. Indeed, he had much more to say along these lines:

When Southern people tell us they are no more responsible for the origin of slavery than we are, I acknowledge the fact. When it is said that the institution exists, and it is very difficult to get rid of it in any satisfactory way, I can understand and appreciate the saying. I surely will not blame them for not doing what I should not know how to do myself. If all earthly power were given me, I should not know what to do as to the existing institution. My first impulse would be to free all the slaves, and send them to Liberia, to their own native land. But a moment's reflection would convince me that whatever of high hope — as I think there is — there may be in this in the long run, its sudden execution is impossible. If they were all landed there in a day, they would all perish in the next ten days; and there are not surplus shipping and surplus money enough to carry them there in many times ten days. What then? Free them all, and keep them among us as underlings? Is it quite certain this betters their condition? I think I would not hold one of them in slavery at any rate, yet the point is not clear enough for me to denounce people upon. What next? Free them, and make them politically and socially our equals? My own feelings will not admit of this, and if mine would, we well know that those of the great mass of whites will not. Whether this feeling accords with justice and sound judgment is not the sole question, if indeed it is any part of it. A universal feeling, whether well or ill founded, cannot be safely disregarded. We cannot make them equals. It does seem to me that systems of gradual emancipation might be adopted, but for their tardiness in this I will not undertake to judge our brethren of the South. <sup>(25)</sup>

While I was at the hotel to-day, an elderly gentleman called upon me to know whether I was really in favor of producing a perfect equality between the negroes and white people. While I had not proposed to myself on this occasion to say much on that subject, yet as the question was asked me I thought I would occupy perhaps five minutes in saying something in regard to it. I will say then that I am not, nor ever have been, in favor of bringing about in any way the social and political equality of the white and black races — that I am not nor ever have been in favor of making voters or jurors of negroes, nor of qualifying them to hold office, nor to intermarry with white people; and I will say in addition to this that there is a physical difference between the white and black races which I believe will forever forbid the two races living together on terms of social and political equality. And inasmuch as they cannot so live, while they do remain together there must be the position of superior and inferior, and I as much as any other man am in favor of having the superior position assigned to the white race. <sup>(26)</sup>

In response to Stephen Douglas on 18 September 1858, Lincoln was very frank in saying, "I am not in favor of negro citizenship... Now my opinion is that the different States have the power to make a negro a citizen under the *Constitution* of the United States if they choose. The *Dred Scott* decision decides that they have not that power. If the State of Illinois had that power I should be opposed to the exercise of it." <sup>(27)</sup> Less than five months prior to delivering the final draft of the *Emancipation Proclamation*, Lincoln addressed a delegation of free Blacks at the Executive Mansion with these words:

...[W]hy... should the people of your race be colonized, and where? Why should they leave the country? This is, perhaps, the first question for consideration. You and we are different races. We have between us a broader difference than exists between almost any other two races. Whether it is right or wrong I need not discuss, but this physical difference is a great disadvantage to us both, as I think your race suffers very greatly, many of them by living among us, while ours suffers from your presence. In a word we suffer on each side. If this be admitted, it affords a reason at least why we should be separated.

You here are freemen, I suppose... but even when you cease to be slaves, you are yet far removed from being placed on an equality with the white race. You are cut off from many of the advantages which the other race enjoys.... Owing to the existence of the two races on this continent, I need not recount to you the effects upon white men growing out of the institution of slavery.

I believe in its general evil effects on the white race. See our present condition — the country engaged in war — our white men cutting one another's throats — none knowing how far it will extend — and then consider what we know to be the truth. But for your race among us there could not be war, although many men engaged on either side do not care for you one way or the other.... It is better for us both therefore to be separated.... <sup>(28)</sup>

The issuance of Lincoln's *Proclamation* brought no change in his position:

I have urged the colonization of the negroes, and I shall continue. My *Emancipation Proclamation* was linked with this plan. There is no room for two distinct races of white men in America, much less for two distinct races of whites and blacks.

I can conceive of no greater calamity than the assimilation of the negro into our social and political life as our equal....

Within twenty years we can peacefully colonize the negro and give him our language, literature, religion, and system of government under conditions in which he can rise to the full measure of manhood. This he can never do here. We can never attain the ideal union our fathers dreamed of, with millions of an alien, inferior race among us, whose assimilation is neither possible nor desirable. <sup>(29)</sup>

In his autobiography, Benjamin Butler referred to a conversation he had with Lincoln in early April 1865 in which the latter said, "I can hardly believe that the South and North can live in peace, unless we can get rid of the negroes." Butler suggested that the Blacks be shipped down to dig the Panama Canal, to which suggestion Lincoln replied, "There is meat in that, General Butler, there is meat in that; but how will it affect our foreign relations?" <sup>(30)</sup> He then suggested that Butler present the plan in writing to Secretary Seward to obtain the latter's assistance in formulating the details. However, an assassin's bullet less than two weeks later squelched any further discussion of these plans for the deportation of America's Blacks.

As we have already seen, Lincoln was certainly not the only Northern leader who believed the Negro to be

inferior to the White man. Like Seward, who believed that the African race was "a foreign and feeble element... incapable of assimilation," Senator Charles Sumner of Massachusetts, one of the leading agitators for Abolitionism, wrote of his first sight of Negro slaves, "My worst preconception of their appearance and their ignorance did not fall as low as their actual stupidity... They appear to be nothing more than moving masses of flesh unendowed with anything of intelligence above the brutes."<sup>(31)</sup> William Tecumseh Sherman, who would later achieve notoriety for his destructive "March to the Sea," likewise believed that "all the Congresses on earth can't make the negro anything else than what he is; he must be subject to the white man, or he must amalgamate or be destroyed. Two such races cannot live in harmony, save as master and slave."<sup>(32)</sup> These men were merely voicing a universal racial prejudice which no one at that time, with the possible exception of a handful of fanatics, disputed.

### Treatment of Slaves in the Ante-Bellum South

It behooves us now to examine the extravagant charges which the anti-slavery agitators brought against the Southern slaveholders and which have since been written into the history books. As mentioned before, the aversion of modern Americans to the alleged plight of slaves in the old South has been derived from over two hundred years of Abolitionist propaganda. Even before the Nineteenth Century, the Northern press was rife with horrific descriptions of the alleged maltreatment of the Negroes by their aristocratic masters. In the *Pelham Papers*, published in Connecticut in 1796, it was asserted that the slaves were treated "like brutes" and that "they are bought and sold; they are fed or kept hungry; they are clothed, or reduced to nakedness; they are beaten, turned out to the fury of the elements, and torn from their dearest connections, with as little remorse as if they were beasts of the field" [emphasis in original]. This publication even made the outrageous assertion that "if they were good for food, the probability is that the power of destroying their lives would be enjoyed by their owners as fully as it is over the lives of their cattle" [emphasis in original].<sup>(33)</sup>

The organization of Northern Abolitionism in the 1830s produced a plethora of literature ingeniously designed to play upon the emotions of the reader and to take advantage of the general ignorance of Southern institutions. The year following Weld's ground-breaking compilation, *American Slavery As It Is*, Richard Hildeth's purported history of Southern social life entitled *Despotism in America* was published in Boston. In this inflammatory work, the author claimed the following:

The Bible has been proscribed at the South, as an incendiary publication; a book not fit for slaves to read or hear. In some parts of the country the catechism is looked upon with almost equal suspicion; and many masters forbid their slaves to hear any preacher, black or white, since they consider religion upon the plantation as quite out of place, a thing dangerous to the master's authority, and therefore not to be endured in the slave....

The slaves are regarded not merely as animals, but as animals of the wildest and most ferocious character. They are thought to be like tigers, trained to draw the plough, whom nothing but fear, the whip, and constant watchfulness, keep at all in subjection, and who if left to themselves would quickly recover their savage natures, and find no enjoyment except to reek in blood.<sup>(34)</sup>

In his short history of the English colonies, published in Boston after the war, Henry Cabot Lodge wrote:

The negroes in South Carolina were helplessly degraded, rarely baptized or married, lived like animals, their condition of complete barbarism — the slaves were grievously overworked....

The slaves of the South were not allowed to have a dog. They were coarsely clothed and fed upon meal and water sweetened with molasses and even punished with barbarity....

If a Bible should be left in a negro cabin, the colporteur would be ushered to Heaven from the lowest limb of a tree on the nearest hill.<sup>(35)</sup>

In conducting their "research," modern American historians rely heavily upon such fanciful accounts as these to continue the tradition of vilifying antebellum Southern slavery. For example, in the popular Time-Life *Civil War* series, William C. Davis wrote:

Born into bondage, very likely sold at least once during the course of his or her lifetime, a slave normally began to work in the fields by the age of 12. From that point on, overwork was his daily portion....

The majority of slaves were fed poorly; many subsisted chiefly on a "hog and hominy" diet, which consisted of a peck of corn and about three pounds of fatty salted meat a week. They were generally clothed in shabby homespun or in cheap fabrics known as "Negro cloth," which were manufactured in Northern or English spinning mills. Children wore only shirts and went shoeless even in winter.

From six to 12 slaves were quartered in each leaky, drafty, dirt-floored one-room shack.... What medical care slaves received was primitive at best. Malaria, yellow fever, cholera, tuberculosis, typhoid, typhus, tetanus and pneumonia took terrible tolls. Many slaves were afflicted with worms, dysentery and rotten teeth. Fewer than four out of 100 lived to be 60 years of age. Slaves were kept in a state of fear by punishment and the threat of punishment. They were required to show abject humility when they addressed whites: They had to bow their heads and lower their gaze. No wonder that slaves — even those who received relatively good treatment — yearned for freedom.<sup>(36)</sup>

Accompanying this horrific, yet undocumented, account are the photographs of four slaves – two middle-aged males, an elderly male, and a female. All four of these people were obviously well-fed and in perfect health, showing absolutely no sign of the poor diet, manifold diseases, or even the rotten teeth declared to be so common by the author. The same characteristics may be found in the photographs and illustrations offered over the next eight pages of the same book, including a period painting of a Christmas ball enjoyed by slave men and women dressed in evening gowns and tuxedos.<sup>(37)</sup> On one page is found a photograph of a dozen slave cabins with the notable features of raised wooden floors and chimneys.<sup>(38)</sup> Furthermore, all of the children shown in this latter photograph are not only well-fed, but also fully clothed. This same phenomenon is blatantly apparent in nearly all the pictorial histories of slavery that are published today,<sup>(39)</sup> and only in rare instances is any actual evidence offered to substantiate the alleged atrocities.



The truth is that the abominable treatment of slaves described above was a rarity in the South, and was, in fact, against the law. Commenting on the civil protection granted to slaves by law in South Carolina, Judge John Belton O'Neill of the State supreme court said:

Although slaves, by the Act of 1740, are declared to be chattels personal, yet they are also, in our law, considered as persons with many rights and liabilities, civil and criminal. The right of protection which would belong to a slave, as a human being, is, by the law of slavery, transferred to his master. A master may protect the person of his slave from injury, by repelling force with force, or by action, and in some cases by indictment. Any injury done to the person of his slave, he may redress by action of trespass *vi et armis*, without laying the injury done, with a *per quod servitum amisit*, and this even though he may have hired the slave to another.

By the Act of 1821, the murder of a slave is declared to be felony, without the benefit of clergy; and by the same Act, to kill any slave, on sudden heat or passion, subjects the offender, on conviction, to a fine of not exceeding \$500, and imprisonment not exceeding six months....

The Act of 1841 makes the unlawful whipping or beating of any slave, without sufficient provocation by word or act, a misdemeanor; and subjects the offender, on conviction, to imprisonment not exceeding six months, and a fine not exceeding \$500.<sup>(40)</sup>

The Georgia slave law of 1815 stated:

Any owner of a slave, who shall cruelly beat such slave or slaves by unnecessary or excessive whipping; by withholding proper food and nourishment; by requiring greater labour from such slave or slaves than he, or she, or they may be able to perform; by not affording proper clothing, whereby the health of such slave or slaves may be injured or impaired; every such owner or owners of slaves shall, upon sufficient information being laid before the grand jury, be by said grand jury presented; whereupon it shall be the duty of the attorney or solicitor-general to prosecute such owner or owners for misdemeanor; who, on conviction, shall be sentenced to pay a fine, or imprisonment in the county jail, or both, at the discretion of the court.

From and after the passing of this Act, it shall be the duty of the inferior courts of the several counties in this State, on receiving information on oath, of any infirm slave or slaves, in a suffering condition, from the neglect of the owner or owners of said slave or slaves, to make particular inquiries into the situation of such slave or slaves, and render such relief as they, in their discretion, shall think fit. The said courts may, and are hereby authorised to, sue for and recover from the owner or owners of such slave or slaves, in any court having jurisdiction of the same, any law, usage, or custom to the contrary notwithstanding.

Any person who shall maliciously dismember, or deprive a slave of his life, shall suffer such punishment as would be inflicted in case the like offense had been committed on a free white person, and on the like proof, except in case of insurrection by said slave, and unless such death should happen by accident in giving such slave moderate correction.<sup>(41)</sup>

The Louisiana law relating to slaves was as follows:

Every owner shall be held to give his slaves the quantity of provisions hereinafter specified – to wit, one barrel of Indian corn, or the equivalent thereof in rice, beans, or other grain, and a pint of salt; and to deliver the same to the slaves in kind, every month, and never in money, under a penalty of a fine of ten dollars for every offence. The slave who shall not have, on the property of his owner, a lot of ground to cultivate on his own account, shall be entitled to receive from the said owner one linen shirt and pantaloons for the summer, and a linen and woolen great coat and pantaloons for the winter.

As for the hours of work and rest which are to be assigned to slaves in summer, the old usage of the territory shall be adhered to: to wit, the slave shall be allowed half an hour for breakfast during the whole year; from the first of May to the first day of November, they shall be allowed two hours for dinner; and from the first day of November to the first say of May, one hour and a half for dinner.<sup>(42)</sup>

The constitution of Texas stated:

[The legislature] shall have full power to pass laws, which will oblige the owners of slaves to treat them with humanity, to provide for them necessary food and clothing, to abstain from all injuries to them, extending to life or limb; and, in the case of their neglect or refusal to comply with the directions of such laws, to have such slave or slaves taken from their owner, and sold for the benefit of

such owner or owners. They may pass laws to prevent slaves from being brought into this State as merchandise only.

In the prosecution of slaves for the crimes of a higher grade than petit larceny, the Legislature shall have no power to deprive them of an impartial trial by jury.

Any person who shall maliciously dismember or deprive a slave of life, shall suffer such punishment as would be inflicted, in case the like offence had been committed upon a free white person, and on the like proof, except in case of insurrection of such slave. <sup>(43)</sup>

### Race Relations in the Southern States

Slaves in the South were generally viewed as members of the families to whom they belonged and were the recipients of a truly humanitarian social security from cradle to grave. If nothing else, they were considered valuable assets to the plantation economy and, having paid an average of \$1,500 in hard cash for a single male slave, <sup>(44)</sup> a planter was not likely to abuse his investment. In addition, the mental picture painted above of downtrodden and humiliated slaves "yearning for freedom" is much closer to fantasy than fact:

The negroes were perfectly contented with their lot. In general, they were not only happy in their condition, but proud of it. Their hardships were such as are inherent in the state of those who labor at the will of others for their daily bread. On the other hand, they were nursed in sickness, and cared for in old age. If any individual among them displayed superior abilities or qualities, he could easily obtain his freedom if he desired it. There were many free negroes in each of the slave States, and not a few who were prosperous in business, had acquired no inconsiderable possessions, and held persons of their own race as slaves. To the whole South, at least, the tender mercies which would disturb this state of things seemed cruel; but their people chiefly resented any such interference, because it was unjust to them, as being in violation of the laws of the land. <sup>(45)</sup>

The negro slave was a highly valued member of the body politic; a tiller of the soil, whose services could be counted on when the crop was pitched, and a laborer who furnished to all his fellows, young and old, sick and well, a more liberal supply of the necessities of life than was ever granted to any other laboring class in any other place or any other age. And in what the Economists call the distribution of the wealth that was produced by the negro's labor and the skill of the master who guided and restrained him, the share the master took was small indeed compared with what the Captains of Industry took in the free society of the same day. Compared with the share those Captains take now, the modest share taken by the masters was what the magnates of to-day would scorn to consider. The negro lived, too, in cheerful ignorance of the ills for which he has been so much pitied. One is startled now to hear the cheerful whistle or the loud outburst of song from a negro that once was heard on every hand, night and day. Nor was his attitude one of mere resignation to his lot. That it was one of hearty goodwill to the masters was conclusively shown during the war between the States. A distinguished Northern writer has lately invited attention to the indisputable fact that the negroes could have ended the war during any one day or night that it lasted. And the kindly attitude of the negro to the master was shown not negatively only, not by forbearance only. Not only did a vast majority of them stay at their posts, working to feed and watching to protect the families of the absent soldiers – when all the able-bodied white men were absent soldiers – but after their emancipation ten thousand examples occurred of respectful and grateful and even generous conduct to their late masters for one instance where a revengeful or a reproachful or even disrespectful demonstration was made. Of the few survivors of those who stood in the relation of master and slave, a considerable number still maintain relations of strong and often tender friendship. John Stuart Mill worshipped liberty and detested slavery, but he confessed that the goodwill of the slaves to the master was to him inexplicable. <sup>(46)</sup>

It should be remembered that Northern anti-slavery books and novels were generally compiled and written by people who had never seen for themselves the atrocities they described with such vivid detail. George Lunt noted that "very few of those who thus drew upon their imaginations for their descriptions and illustrations had ever stepped an inch over Mason and Dixon's line.... When they discoursed upon this subject they dilated upon what might have been, in other nations and other times, as if it were applicable to our own citizens and our own day." <sup>(47)</sup> The testimony of eye-witnesses was quite different from that of these fanatical visionaries. Kenneth Stampf, by no means a pro-Southern historian, wrote, "Visitors often registered surprise at the social intimacy that existed between masters and slaves in certain instances." <sup>(48)</sup> For example, James S. Buckingham, an Abolitionist from Great Britain who toured the Southern States in 1839, stated:

...[T]he prejudice of color is not nearly so strong in the South as in the North. It is not at all uncommon to see the black slaves of both sexes, shake hands with white people when they meet, and interchange friendly personal inquiries; but at the North I do not remember to have witnessed this once; and neither in Boston, New York, or Philadelphia would white persons generally like to be seen shaking hands and talking familiarly with blacks on the streets. <sup>(49)</sup>

In his book entitled *The Secession War in America*, published in London during the war, Taliaferro P. Shaffner included the following letter of Major-General John Quitman, a native of New York living in Mississippi in 1822, to his father:

The mansions of the planters are thrown open to all comers and goes free of charge.... I am now writing from one of these old mansions, and I can give you no better notion of life at the South than by describing the routine of a day. The owner is the widow of a Virginia gentleman of distinction – a brave officer who died in the public service during the last war with Great Britain....

This excellent lady is not rich, merely independent; but by thrifty housewifery, and a good dairy and garden, she contrives to dispense the most liberal hospitality. Her slaves appear to be, in a manner, free, yet are obedient and polite, and the farm is well worked. With all her gayety of disposition and fondness for the young, she is truly pious; and in her own apartments, every night,

she has family prayers with her slaves; one or more of them being often called on to sing and pray. When a minister visits the house, which happens very frequently, prayers night and morning are always said; and on occasions the whole household and the guests assemble in the parlor; chairs are provided for the servants. They are married by a clergyman of their own color; and a sumptuous supper is always prepared. On public holidays they have dinners equal to an Ohio barbecue; and Christmas, for a week or ten days, is a protracted festival for the blacks. They are a happy, careless, unreflecting, good-natured race; who left to themselves would degenerate into drones or brutes; but, subjected to wholesome restraint and stimulus, become the best and most contented of laborers. They are strongly attached to "old massa" and "old missus;" but their devotion to "young massa" and "young missus," amounts to enthusiasm. They have great family pride, and are the most arrant coxcombs and aristocrats in the world. At a wedding I witnessed here last Saturday evening, where some one hundred and fifty negroes were assembled — many being invited guests — I heard a number of them addressed as governors, generals, judges, and doctors (the titles of their masters); and a spruce, tight-set darkey, who waits on me in town, was called "Major Quitman." The "colored ladies" are invariably Miss Joneses, Miss Smiths, or some such title. They are exceedingly pompous and ceremonious; gloved and highly perfumed. The "gentlemen" sport canes, ruffles, and jewelry; wear boots and spurs; affect crape on their hats, and carry huge segars. The belles wear gaudy colors, "tote" their fans with the air of Spanish señoritas; and never stir out, though black as the ace of spades, without their parasols.

In short, these "niggers," as you call them, are the happiest people I have ever seen; and some of them, in form, features, and movements, are real sultanas. So far from being fed on "salted cottonseed," as we used to believe in Ohio, they are oily, sleek, bountifully fed, well clothed, well taken care of; and one hears them at all times whistling and singing cheerfully at their work....

Compared with the ague-smitten and suffering settlers that you and I have seen in Ohio, or the sickly and starved operatives we read of in factories and in mines, these Southern slaves are indeed to be envied. They are treated with great humanity and kindness.<sup>(50)</sup>

Ironically, the most devastating rebuttal of Abolitionist anti-slavery propaganda to be published in the Nineteenth Century was written by one of their own number — the aforementioned Nehemiah Adams of Boston, who toured the South for three months in 1854. Instead of the expected scenes of cowering slaves, whose humanity was being crushed by cruel bondage, what he found was a well-ordered society in which the Negroes were mainly content, well-cared for by their masters, and even evangelized.<sup>(51)</sup> In his book, *A Southside View of Slavery*, Adams described the legal protection enjoyed by the Southern slaves:

Pauperism is prevented by slavery. This idea is absurd, no doubt, in the apprehension of many at the north, who think that slaves are, as a matter of course, paupers. Nothing can be more untrue.

Every slave has an inalienable claim in law upon his owner for support for the whole of life. He can not be thrust into an almshouse, he can not become a vagrant, he can not beg his living, he can not be wholly neglected when he is old and decrepit.

I saw a white-headed negro at the door of his cabin on a gentleman's estate, who had done no work for ten years. He enjoys all the privileges of the plantation, garden, and orchard; is clothed and fed as carefully as though he were useful. On asking him his age, he said he thought he "must be nigh a hundred"; that he was a servant to a gentleman in the army "when Washington fit Cornwallis and took him at Little York."

At a place called Harris's Neck, Georgia, there is a servant who has been confined to his bed with rheumatism thirty years, and no invalid has more reason to be grateful for attention and kindness.

Going into the office of a physician and surgeon, I accidentally saw the leg of a black man which had just been amputated for an ulcer. The patient will be a charge upon his owner for life. An action at law may be brought against one who does not provide a comfortable support for his servants.<sup>(52)</sup>

In regions where slavery was no longer a profitable enterprise, and in States where manumission was made legally difficult, if not impossible, many individual planters felt "they were involved in a regime which they could not control, but which required them to carry on, more for the sake of their slaves than for their own welfare."<sup>(53)</sup> Even when manumission was permitted, the slaveowner was usually not released from responsibility for the welfare of his former slaves. According to a law passed by the General Assembly of Virginia on 17 December 1792, "It shall be lawful for any person... to emancipate and set free his or her slaves.... provided always, that all slaves so set free, not being in the judgment of the Court of sound mind and body, or being above the age of forty-five years, or being males under the age of twenty-one, or females under the age of eighteen years, shall respectively be supported and maintained by the person so liberating them, or by his or her estate...."<sup>(54)</sup> Compare this law to the cold indifference in the North, especially in Massachusetts, where slaveowners in the Eighteenth Century "manumitted aged or infirm slaves to relieve the master from the charge of supporting them."<sup>(55)</sup>

The above descriptions of plantation life in the South cannot be easily discounted, especially when they have been corroborated by the participants themselves. In the late 1930s, the Works Project Administration of the U.S. Government collected the testimonies of former slaves throughout the South which are preserved in the *Slave Narratives* in the National Archives of Washington, D.C. The vast majority of those interviewed had fond memories of their masters and mistresses on Southern plantations. For example, Tom Douglas, a former slave of Alabama, stated, "Slavery times wuz sho good times. We wuz fed an' clothed an' had nothin' to worry about."<sup>(56)</sup> Simon Phillips of Alabama said, "People has the wrong idea of slave days. We was treated good. My massa never laid a hand on me the whole time I was wid him.... Sometime we loaned the massa money when he was hard pushed."<sup>(57)</sup> Gus Brown of Richmond, Virginia remembered his former master back in Alabama with these words: "I cannot forget old massa. He was good and kind. He never believed in slavery, but his money was tied up in slaves and he didn't want to lose all he had. I knows I will see him in heaven and even though I have to walk ten miles for a bite of bread, I can still be happy

to think about the good times we had then."<sup>(58)</sup> Exhibiting a profound sadness about the results of the forced "emancipation" brought about by the North, Mary Rice, of Alabama said, "I was happy all de time in slavery days, but dere ain't much to git happy over now."<sup>(59)</sup> James Gill of Arkansas likewise testified, "...[A]ll dem good times ceasted atter a while when de War come and de Yankees started all dere debbilment. Us was Confederates all de while."<sup>(60)</sup> It is not surprising, in light of these and a multitude of similar testimonies, that following their compilation over seventy years ago, the *Slave Narratives* were immediately suppressed and hidden from the public.

While it is true that Blacks were excluded from citizenship in the South – as they were throughout the Union – they nevertheless were viewed as valuable members of Southern society and, with few exceptions, were treated as such. As historian James G. Randall noted:

There was... such a vast difference between the laws on paper and the system that existed in reality that it would be unhistorical to judge the slave regime in the South by this or that severe law which might be found by digging up old codes. The laws, especially where they were most drastic, were not strictly applied. Slaves were, in fact, taught to read and write; they did go abroad in a manner forbidden by statute; they did congregate despite laws forbidding their assembling. Members of the legislatures satisfied their sense of social duty by passing severe laws; and the people paid as much or as little attention to the laws as they saw fit.... It could not be said that either the laws themselves or the actual practices of the institution were primarily motivated by any intention to treat the Negroes harshly.<sup>(61)</sup>

The fact that a great many slaveholders were conscientious in the treatment of their slaves proves that abuse and neglect were not inherent characteristics of the antebellum relationship between master and slave, and that racial animosity was not the foundation of the institution. In fact, according to the 1860 census, there were 250,000 free Blacks in the South,<sup>(62)</sup> many of whom owned slaves of their own. For example, in 1860, the number of Black slaveholders in the State of South Carolina alone was 171, holding property in 766 slaves.<sup>(63)</sup> Nearly one-half of those classified as "colored taxpayers" in Charleston owned between them a total of 390 slaves,<sup>(64)</sup> and at the end of the war, 241 slaves in that city were released from service to their Black masters.<sup>(65)</sup> It is true that some of the slaves purchased and held by these Negro masters were "their own kindred, bought and held merely because the laws forbade manumission without exile."<sup>(66)</sup> Nevertheless, others had an economic, not merely a personal, interest in the institution. According to Larry Koger, "...[M]any black masters did not intend to manumit their slaves and viewed the institution of slavery as a source of labor to be exploited for their own benefit. Indeed, free blacks not only used the labor of slaves to till the soil of their farms and plantations but also purchased slaves to work in their businesses as skilled and unskilled laborers.... [T]he system of American slavery was a universal institution in which even Afro-Americans became slaveowners and occasionally ascended to the ranks of large slaveowning planters."<sup>(67)</sup>

Modern history revisionism notwithstanding, the evidence is overwhelming that the old South was the true friend of the Black man and that the rampant inhumanity so often associated with Southern culture is largely a myth. Furthermore, the institution of slavery was rapidly dying out in the upper South, and would not likely have survived in the deep South longer than another generation. Had the interference of the Northern Abolitionists not threatened the fabric of Southern society, the voices of the extreme pro-slavery apologists<sup>(68)</sup> would never have had a very large audience<sup>(69)</sup> and the racial tensions which arose following the war would probably not have developed:

The South has been vilified for not educating the negro in the days of slavery.

The South was giving the negro the best possible education – that education that fitted him for the workshop, the field, the church, the kitchen, the nursery, the home. This was an education that taught the negro self-control, obedience and perseverance – yes, taught him to realize his weaknesses and how to grow stronger for the battle of life. The institution of slavery as it was in the South, so far from degrading the negro, was fast elevating him above his nature and his race....

The black man ought to thank the institution of slavery – the easiest road that any slave people have ever passed from savagery to civilization with the kindest and most humane masters. Hundreds of thousands of the slaves in 1865 were professing Christians and many were partaking of the communion in the church of their masters.<sup>(70)</sup>

### Anti-Negro Laws in the Northern States

To say that the prevailing attitude towards the Black man was not as positive in the North as in the South would be a gross understatement. In 1838, Alexis de Tocqueville of Great Britain wrote of his tour of both North and South in his book *Democracy in America* and described race relations in this country as follows: "Prejudice of race appears to be stronger in the States that have abolished slavery, than in those where it still exists; and nowhere is it so intolerant as in those States where servitude has never been known.... [The Southern people are] much more tolerant and compassionate."<sup>(71)</sup> According to another British writer, free Negroes were "treated like lepers" in the North.<sup>(72)</sup> The biographers of William Lloyd Garrison noted, "The free colored people were looked upon as an inferior caste to whom their liberty was a curse, and their lot worse than that of the slaves...." Throughout the North, there was a spirit which "either by statute or custom, denied to a dark skin, civil, social and educational equality...."<sup>(73)</sup>

In addition to the restriction of suffrage and the holding of public office to White males only, which was common to nearly all of the States, several of the Northern States went much further than those in the South to enact laws regulating and even prohibiting the immigration of Blacks and Mulattoes within their borders. In drafting a constitution

in preparation to admission to the Union, the Ohio Convention, composed mainly of New Englanders, determined that "people of color" were not to be considered as parties and therefore should have no part in the administration of the new State government.<sup>(74)</sup> In 1804, the State legislature passed a law that required Blacks to produce certificates of their freedom from a Court of Record and execute bonds not to become charges upon the counties in which they settled.<sup>(75)</sup> The Ohio supreme court went so far as to declare in 1831 that "color alone is sufficient to indicate a negro's inability to testify against a white man."<sup>(76)</sup> In another case, the same court declared:

It has always been admitted, that our political institutions embrace the white population only. Persons of color were not recognized as having any political existence. They had no agency in our political organizations, and possessed no political rights under it. Two or three of the States form exceptions. The constitutions of fourteen expressly exclude persons of color by a provision similar to our own; and, in the balance of the States, they are excluded on the ground that they were never recognized as a part of the body politic.... Indeed, it is a matter of history, that the very object of introducing the word *white* into our constitution, by the convention framing that instrument, was to put this question beyond all cavil or doubt, by, in express terms, excluding all persons from the enjoyment of the elective franchise, except persons of pure white blood.

...Hence, we find, so early as 1804, followed up by another act in 1807, statutes discouraging the emigration of blacks into our State, and imposing upon those among us such conditions and restrictions as would induce the vast majority of them to quit the State. Thus, we have denied them all constitutional right to remain even in the State....

This exclusion of persons of color, or, of any degree of colored blood, from all political rights, is not founded upon a mere naked prejudice, but upon natural differences. The two races are placed as wide apart by the hand of nature as *white* from *black*, and, to break down the barriers, fixed, as it were, by the Creator himself, in a political and social amalgamation, shocks us, as something unnatural and wrong. It strikes us as a violation of the laws of nature. It would be productive of no good. It would degrade the white, if it could be accomplished, without elevating the black. Indeed, if we gather lessons of wisdom from the history of mankind – walk by the light of our experience, or consult the principles of human nature, we shall be convinced that the two races never can live together upon terms of equality and *harmony* [emphasis in original].<sup>(77)</sup>

On 10 February 1831, the legislature of Indiana enacted a very similar restriction as existed in Ohio, but with the adoption of its 1851 constitution, Blacks and Mulattoes were entirely prohibited entry or settlement into the State.<sup>(78)</sup> This prohibition was inserted with the approval of a ninety thousand majority of the popular vote.<sup>(79)</sup>

Anti-Negro legislation began in Illinois only one year after the State was organized and admitted to the Union. On 30 March 1819, an act went into effect which stated that "no black or mulatto person shall be permitted to settle or reside in this State, unless he or she shall first produce a certificate signed by some judge or some clerk of some court of the United States, of his or her actual freedom." All free Blacks were required by this law to register themselves together with the evidence of their freedom in the county where they intended to reside, and it also prohibited the employment of any Black or Mulatto who had not been so registered. Furthermore, this act prescribed "lashes on his or her bare back" for slaves found "ten miles from the tenement of his or her master" (a maximum of thirty-five lashes), "being on the plantation or in the tenement of another than the master, not being sent on lawful business" (ten lashes), and for the gathering of three or more slaves "for the purpose of dancing or reveling either by day or night" (thirty-nine lashes).<sup>(80)</sup> On 17 January 1829, this act was supplemented by another which declared that any Blacks or Mulattoes found within the State without the necessary registration papers were to be "deemed runaway slaves," arrested by the Sheriff, and if not claimed, were to be sold "for the best price he can get."<sup>(81)</sup> Not satisfied with these laws, the Illinois legislature passed yet another act "to prevent the immigration of free negroes into this state" and added that any Black person found in violation of this law should be fined and sold into temporary servitude to pay the fine and cost of prosecution.<sup>(82)</sup> Thus, as one writer put it, Negroes "seeking homes on the prairies... were put upon the block."<sup>(83)</sup> The provisions of this statute were finally added to the State constitution in 1862 with these words: "No negro or mulatto shall immigrate or settle in this state after the adoption of the constitution."<sup>(84)</sup> In 1843, the supreme court of Illinois declared that the purpose of these laws was "to prevent the influx of that most unacceptable population."<sup>(85)</sup>

The following provision was written into the 1857 constitution for Oregon:

No free negro or mulatto not residing in this State at the adoption of this constitution, shall come, reside, or be within this State, or hold any real estate, or make any contracts, or maintain any suit therein; and the legislative assembly shall provide by penal laws for the removal by public officers of all such negroes and mulattoes, and for their effectual exclusion from this State, and for the punishment of persons who shall bring them into the State, or employ or harbor them.<sup>(86)</sup>

On 9 December 1857, Governor George L. Curry certified that 8,641 Citizens of Oregon had voted in favor of this constitution, with only 1,081 opposing it.<sup>(87)</sup>

In 1835, a free Black man sued for the right to vote in Pennsylvania. The State supreme court replied:

...[A] free negro or mulatto is not a citizen within the meaning of the *Constitution* and laws of the United States, and of the State of Pennsylvania, and, therefore, is not entitled to the right of suffrage.... But in addition to interpretation from usage, this antecedent legislation declared that no colored race was party to our social compact. Our ancestors settled the province as a community of white men; and the blacks were introduced into it as a race of slaves; whence an unconquerable prejudice of caste, which has come down to our day.... Consistently with this prejudice, is it to be credited that parity of rank would be allowed to such a race?... I have thought fair to treat the question as it stands affected by our own municipal regulations without illustration from those of

other States, where the condition of the race has been still less favored. Yet it is proper to say that the second section of the fourth article of the Federal *Constitution*, presents an obstacle to the political freedom of the negro, which seems to be insuperable.<sup>(88)</sup>

Even in the New England States, where Abolitionist ideals were most prevalent, Negroes were not found to be treated equally with Whites. As late as 1802, the following law was in force in Massachusetts:

That no person, being an African or negro, other than a subject of the Emperor of Morocco, or a citizen of the United States [sic], to be evidenced by a certificate, &c., shall tarry within this commonwealth for a longer time than two months; if he does, the justices have power to order such person to depart, &c., and if such person shall not depart within ten days, &c., such person shall be committed to the prison or house of correction. And for this offense, &c., he shall be whipped, &c., and ordered again to depart in ten days; and if he does not, the same process and punishment to be inflicted, and so *toties quoties*.<sup>(89)</sup>

Intermarriage between Blacks and Whites was also prohibited by law in both Massachusetts and Maine as late as 1835.<sup>(90)</sup>

While Blacks were not excluded from Connecticut, the legislature nevertheless enacted a law in 1833 which forbade the establishment within the State of any "school, academy, or literary institution, for the instruction or education of colored persons, who are not inhabitants of this State." This was done because it was feared that making education available to non-resident Negroes would lead "to the great increase of the colored population of the State, and thereby to the injury of the people."<sup>(91)</sup> In October of that same year, the constitutionality of this law was brought before the Connecticut supreme court for review. Responding to the assertion of the defendant in this case that the law violated Article IV, Section 2 of the United States *Constitution* — the "Comity Clause" which guaranteed that the rights of a State Citizen would be protected throughout the Union — Chief Justice David Daggett wrote an opinion which was nearly identical to what Taney would deliver over thirty years later:

The persons contemplated in this act are not citizens within the obvious meaning of that section of the *Constitution* of the United States which I have just read. Let me begin by putting this plain question: Are *slaves* citizens? At the adoption of the *Constitution* of the United States, every State was a slave State.... We all know that slavery is recognized in that *Constitution*; it is the duty of this court to take that *Constitution* as it is, for we have sworn to support it.... Then slaves were not considered citizens by the framers of the *Constitution*....

Are *free blacks* citizens?... To my mind it would be a perversion of terms, and the well known rules of construction, to say that slaves, free blacks, or Indians were citizens, within the meaning of that term as used in the *Constitution*. God forbid that I should add to the degradation of this race of men; but I am bound, by my duty, to say that they are not citizens [emphasis in original].<sup>(92)</sup>

Finally, when drafting and ratifying a constitution in 1859, the people of Kansas — most of whom were Abolitionist immigrants from the New England States — both excluded free Blacks from citizenship and forbade their settlement in the State.<sup>(93)</sup> The provision in the Kansas constitution which denied citizenship to the Negro was ratified by an overwhelming majority vote of 2,223 to 453.<sup>(94)</sup> Thus we see that "free soil" in the North really meant "free from Negroes." This is why the so-called "Underground Railroad" ended, not in the Northern States of the Union, but in Canada. Even the majority of Northern Abolitionists did not advocate the social and political equality of Blacks within their own States; they agitated for thirty years for the destruction of slavery, but what to do with four million freedmen they considered to be a Southern problem. In fact, so great was the apprehension in the North during the war of the possibility of a massive immigration of Blacks as a result of emancipation in the South that Lincoln was compelled to reassure the Northern Congressmen with the following address:

But it is dreaded that the freed people will swarm forth and cover the whole land. Are they not already in the land? Will liberation make them more numerous? Equally distributed among the whites of the whole country, and there would be but one colored to seven whites. Could the one in any way disturb the seven?...

But why should emancipation South send the free people North? People of any color seldom run unless there be something to run from. Heretofore colored people to some extent have fled North from bondage and now perhaps from both bondage and destitution. But if gradual emancipation and deportation be adopted they will have neither to flee from.... And in any event cannot the North decide for itself whether to receive them?<sup>(95)</sup>

It is beyond reasonable dispute that Stephen Douglas was merely stating an historical fact when he declared in 1858 that "this Government was established on the white basis. It was made by white men, for the benefit of white men and their posterity forever, and never should be administered by any except white men."<sup>(96)</sup> Whether this was just or unjust is irrelevant to the point at hand: the system of government thus established could only be altered or abolished by those who framed it or by their posterity, to whom alone they bequeathed the authority to do so. As we shall see, this has never been done and over a century of propaganda has not changed that fact, no matter how many millions of Americans have been led to believe otherwise.

## Endnotes

1. Lunt, *Origin of the Late War*, pages x-xi.
2. David Wilmot, quoted in Richard H. Sewell, *Ballots For Freedom: Antislavery Politics in the United States, 1837-1860* (New York: W.W. Norton, 1976), page 173).
3. William Seward, speech delivered in the Senate on 11 March 1850; *Congressional Globe* (Thirty-First Congress, First Session), Appendix, page 261.
4. Seward, speech delivered at Rochester, New York on 25 October 1858; in Baker, *Works of Seward*, Volume IV, page 302.
5. William H. Seward, speech delivered at Detroit, Michigan on 4 September 1860; quoted by William P. Pickett, *The Negro Problem: Abraham Lincoln's Solution* (New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1909), page 449.
6. Benjamin Wade, speech delivered in the Senate on 17 December 1860; *Congressional Globe* (Thirty-Sixth Congress, Second Session), page 104.
7. Roy P. Basler (editor), *Abraham Lincoln: His Speeches and Writings* (New York: Da Capo Press, 1946), page 23.
8. Lincoln, quoted by David Donald, *Lincoln* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1996), page 94.
9. Robert W. Johannsen, *Lincoln, the South, and Slavery: The Political Dimension* (Baton Rouge, Louisiana: Louisiana State University Press, 1991), page 14.
10. Lincoln, speech delivered in 1832; quoted in Osborn H. Oldroyd, *The Lincoln Memorial* (New York: American Union Publishing Company, 1882), Volume I, page 102.
11. Lincoln, letter to Edward Wallace, 11 October 1859; in John G. Nicolay and John Hay (editors), *Abraham Lincoln: Complete Works Comprising His Speeches, Letters, State Papers and Miscellaneous Writings* (New York: The Century Company, 1902), Volume V, pages 256-257.
12. I.F. Boughter, "Western Pennsylvania and the Morrill Tariff," *Western Pennsylvania Historical Magazine* (April, 1923), Volume VI, page 128.
13. Reinhard H. Luthin, "[Abraham Lincoln and the Tariff.](#)" *The American Historical Review* (July, 1944), Volume XLIX, Number 4, page 619.
14. Philadelphia *North American and United States Gazette*, quoted by Luthin, "Abraham Lincoln and the Tariff," page 624.
15. William Bigler, quoted in Philadelphia *Public Ledger*, 12 December 1860.
16. Johannsen, *Lincoln, the South, and Slavery*, page 45.
17. Douglas, speech delivered at Chicago, Illinois on 9 July 1858; in Johannsen, *Lincoln-Douglas Debates*, pages 29, 30-31.
18. Douglas, speech delivered at Springfield, Illinois on 17 July 1858; quoted by Johannsen, *op. cit.*, page 92. Lincoln was not present on this occasion, so this speech is not technically classified as part of the Lincoln-Douglas debates.
19. [The Kentucky Resolutions](#), 10 November 1798.
20. Adam Smith, *An Inquiry into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations* (Indianapolis, Indiana: The Liberty Fund, [1776], 1981).
21. Lincoln, reply to Douglas at Ottawa, Illinois on 21 August 1858; in Johannsen, *Lincoln-Douglas Debates*, page 52.
22. Lincoln, reply to Douglas at Jonesboro, Illinois on 15 September 1858; in Johannsen, *op. cit.*, pages 131, 132.
23. Lincoln, reply to Douglas on 15 October 1858; in Johannsen, *op. cit.*, page 316.
24. Lincoln, address at Springfield, Illinois on 26 June 1857; in Basler, *Collected Works of Lincoln*, Volume I, page 235.
25. Lincoln, reply to Douglas at Peoria, Illinois on 16 October 1858; quoted by Nicolay and Hay, *Abraham Lincoln: Complete Works*, Volume I, page 186.
26. Lincoln, speech delivered at Charleston, Illinois on 18 September 1858; in Johannsen, *Lincoln-Douglas Debates*, page 162.
27. Lincoln, reply to Douglas on 18 September 1858, in Johannsen, *op. cit.*, pages 197, 198.
28. Lincoln, speech delivered at the Executive Mansion on 14 August 1862; in Henry J. Raymond, *The Life and Public Services of Abraham Lincoln Together With His State Papers* (New York: Derby and Miller, 1865), page 504.
29. Lincoln, address delivered at Washington, D.C.; in Basler, *Collected Works of Lincoln*, Volume V, pages 371-375.
30. Lincoln, quoted by Butler, *Butler's Book*, Volume II, pages 903-907.
31. Charles Sumner, quoted by C. Vann Woodward, *The Burden of Southern History* (Baton Rouge, Louisiana: Louisiana State University Press, 1960), page 87.
32. William Tecumseh Sherman, letter dated July, 1860; quoted by W.A. DeWolfe Howe, "General Sherman's Letters Home," *Scribner's Magazine*, April 1909, page 400.
33. *Pelham Papers*, quoted by Carey, *Olive Branch*, page 255.
34. Richard Hildreth, *Despotism in America: An Inquiry Into the Nature and Results of the Slave-Holding System in the United States* (Boston: Anti-Slavery Society, 1840), pages 45, 71.
35. Henry Cabot Lodge, quoted by Mildred Lewis Rutherford, [Truths of History](#) (Athens, Georgia: self-published, 1920), pages 105, 107.
36. Davis, *Brother Against Brother*, pages 48-49.
37. Davis, *op. cit.*, page 57. Apparently, the publishers perceived the problem this particular picture created for the author's narrative, for they inserted the following caption: "Although many planters sponsored festivities at Christmas time, few of their slaves were as well dressed as these." Again, the reader is expected to accept this claim at face value with no supporting evidence.
38. Davis, *op. cit.*, page 56.
39. *The Civil War: A House Divided Cannot Stand* (Fort Atkinson, Wisconsin: Home Library Publishing Company, 1976); William C. Davis and Bell I. Wiley (editors), *Photographic History of the Civil War: Fort Sumter to Gettysburg* (New York: Black Dog and Leventhal Publishers, 1994).
40. John Belton O'Neill, quoted by McHenry, *Cotton Trade*, page 252.
41. Georgia statute of 1815, quoted by McHenry, *op. cit.*, pages 253-254.
42. Louisiana statute, quoted by McHenry, *op. cit.*, page 254.
43. Constitution of the State of Texas (1845), Article VIII.
44. Randall, *Civil War and Reconstruction*, pages 55-56. A healthy female sold for an average of \$1,325 and slaves of "unusual value" sometimes sold for as high as \$2,500.
45. Lunt, *Origin of the Late War*, page 5.
46. Charles L.C. Minor, [The Real Lincoln](#) (Dahlonega, Georgia: Crown Rights Book Company, [1928] 1997), pages 194-195 (footnote).
47. Lunt, *Origin of the Late War*, page 182.
48. Kenneth Stampp, *The Peculiar Institution: Slavery in the Antebellum South* (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1956), page 323.
49. James S. Buckingham, *The Slave States of America* (London: Fisher, Son and Company, 1841), Volume II, page 112.
50. Major-General John Quitman, quoted by Taliaferro P. Shaffner, *The Secession War in America* (London: Hamilton, Adams and Company, 1862).
51. Church membership among Blacks was astonishing high in the old South. Adams stated that in some regions, the number of Black communicants was as high as four times greater than that of the White communicants. In Virginia in 1856, the total number of Black communicants in the Baptist churches was forty-five thousand; in Savannah, Georgia, a full one-third of the Black population were church members; in South Carolina, Negroes comprised a full one-third of the total number of church communicants in the State (*Southside View of Slavery*, pages 53-54). Adams noted, "Religion has gained wonderful ascendancy among this people.... I never perceived in their prayers any thing that reminded me of their condition as slaves. They made no allusions to sorrows but those which are spiritual, and they chiefly dwelt upon their temptations. But the love of Christ and heaven were the all-inspiring themes of their prayers and hymns" (*ibid.*, page 55). If nothing else, the introduction of hundreds of thousands of Negro slaves to the eternally liberating Gospel of Christ was certainly one of the merits of the institution of slavery in the antebellum South.
52. Adams, *op. cit.*, pages 47-48.
53. Randall, *Civil War and Reconstruction*, page 114.
54. *A Collection of All Such Acts of the General Assembly of Virginia of a Public and Permanent Nature as are Now in Force* (Richmond, Virginia: Samuel Pleasants, Jr., 1803), page 200.

55. Spears, *American Slave Trade*, page 92.
56. Tom Douglas, quoted in *Slave Narratives: A Folk History of Slavery in the United States From Interviews With Former Slaves* (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1934), Volume I (The Alabama Narratives), pages 218-219.
57. Simon Phillips, quoted in *op. cit.*, pages 312, 315.
58. Gus Brown, quoted in *op. cit.*, pages 224-226.
59. Mary Rice, quoted in *op. cit.*, pages 329-330.
60. James Gill, quoted in *op. cit.*, Volume III, page 19.
61. Randall, *Civil War and Reconstruction*, pages 47, 48.
62. Randall, *op. cit.*, page 50.
63. Larry Koger, *Black Slaveowners in South Carolina, 1790-1860* (Jefferson, North Carolina: McFarland and Company, Inc., 1985), page 18.
64. Ulrich B. Phillips, *American Negro Slavery* (New York: D. Appleton and Company, 1918), page 434.
65. Koger, *Black Slaveowners*, page 18.
66. Ulrich B. Phillips, *Life and Labor in the Old South* (Boston: Little, Brown, and Company, 1929), page 71 (footnote).
67. Koger, *Black Slaveowners*, page 2.
68. William Sumner Jenkins, *Pro-Slavery Thought in the Old South* (Chapel Hill, North Carolina: The University of North Carolina Press, 1960).
69. On 10 January 1838, John C. Calhoun credited five years of Abolitionist agitation for the shift in Southern thought on the subject of slavery from a general indifference and even hostility toward the institution to one which defended it as a positive good: "This agitation has produced one happy effect at least; it has compelled us in the South to look into the nature and character of this great institution, and to correct many false impressions that even we had entertained in relation to it. Many in the South once believed that it was a moral and political evil; that folly and delusion are gone; we see it now in its true light, and regard it as the most safe and stable basis for free institutions in the world" (*Congressional Globe* [Twenty-Fifth Congress, Second Session], pages 61-62).
70. Rutherford, *Truths of History*, page 18.
71. Alexis de Tocqueville, *Democracy in America* (London: George Allard, 1838), page 338.
72. James Spence, article: "The American Republic: Resurrection Through Dissolution," *Northern British Review*, February 1862, page 240.
73. Garrison and Garrison, *William Lloyd Garrison*, Volume I, pages 253-254.
74. Jacob Burnet, *Notes on the Early Settlement of the North-Western Territory* (Cincinnati, Ohio: Derby, Bradley and Company, 1847), page 355.
75. George W. Williams, *History of the Negro Race in America* (New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1885), Volume II, pages 111-119; Ewing, *Dred Scott Decision*, page 76.
76. *Calvin v. Carter* (1831), 4 Hammonds' Oregon Reports 351.
77. *Thacher v. Hawk* (1842), 11 Stanton's Ohio Reports 384-385. Ironically, Edwin M. Stanton, who would later serve as Secretary of War under Lincoln and would advocate the emancipation of the Southern slaves, was the court reporter at this time.
78. Williams, *Negro Race in America*, Volume II, pages 119-122; McHenry, *Cotton Trade*, page 247.
79. Wilson, *Slave Power in America*, Volume II, page 185.
80. Illinois statute of 30 March 1819, quoted by Ewing, *Dred Scott Decision*, pages 79-80.
81. Illinois statute of 17 January 1829, quoted by Ewing, *op. cit.*, page 80.
82. Williams, *Negro Race in America*, page 123.
83. Arthur Charles Cole, *The Irrepressible Conflict: 1850-1865* (New York: Macmillan Company, 1934), page 264.
84. Constitution of Illinois (1862), Article XVIII, Section 1. This amendment was approved by a majority of 100,590 voters (*Journal of the Constitutional Convention of the State of Illinois* [Springfield, Illinois: C.H. Lanphier, 1862], page 1098).
85. *Eells v. The People* (1843), 4 Scammon 513. There is no record that Abraham Lincoln ever objected to any of these anti-Negro laws which were passed by his own State, and his own public statements on the subject indicated his support of them.
86. Constitution of Oregon (1857), Article I, Section 35.
87. *General Laws of Oregon, 1845-1864*; cited by Ewing, *Dred Scott Decision*, page 66.
88. *Hobbs v. Fogg* (1835), 6 Watts, 553, 554.
89. Massachusetts statute of 1802, quoted by McHenry, *Cotton Trade*, page 244.
90. McHenry, *ibid.*
91. Connecticut statute of 1833, quoted by Garrison and Garrison, *William Lloyd Garrison*, Volume I, page 321.
92. *Crandall v. The State* (1833), 10 Connecticut Reports, 339, 340, 345, 347.
93. Dr. H. Von Holst, *The Constitutional and Political History of the United States* (Chicago, Illinois: Callahan and Company, 1889), Volume V, page 168.
94. Ewing, *Dred Scott Decision*, page 66.
95. Lincoln, 1 December 1862 message to Congress; in Richardson, *Messages and Papers of the Presidents*, Volume VIII, pages 3341-3342.
96. Stephen A. Douglas, response to Lincoln at Charleston, Illinois on 18 September 1858; in Johannsen, *Lincoln-Douglas Debates*, page 196.

## PART ONE:

# Northern Agitation and the Roots of Disunion

---

### [CHAPTER SIX](#)

Racial Attitudes in the North and South

[Supporting Document:](#)

John C. Calhoun's Speech in the United States Senate

[Supplementary Essay:](#)

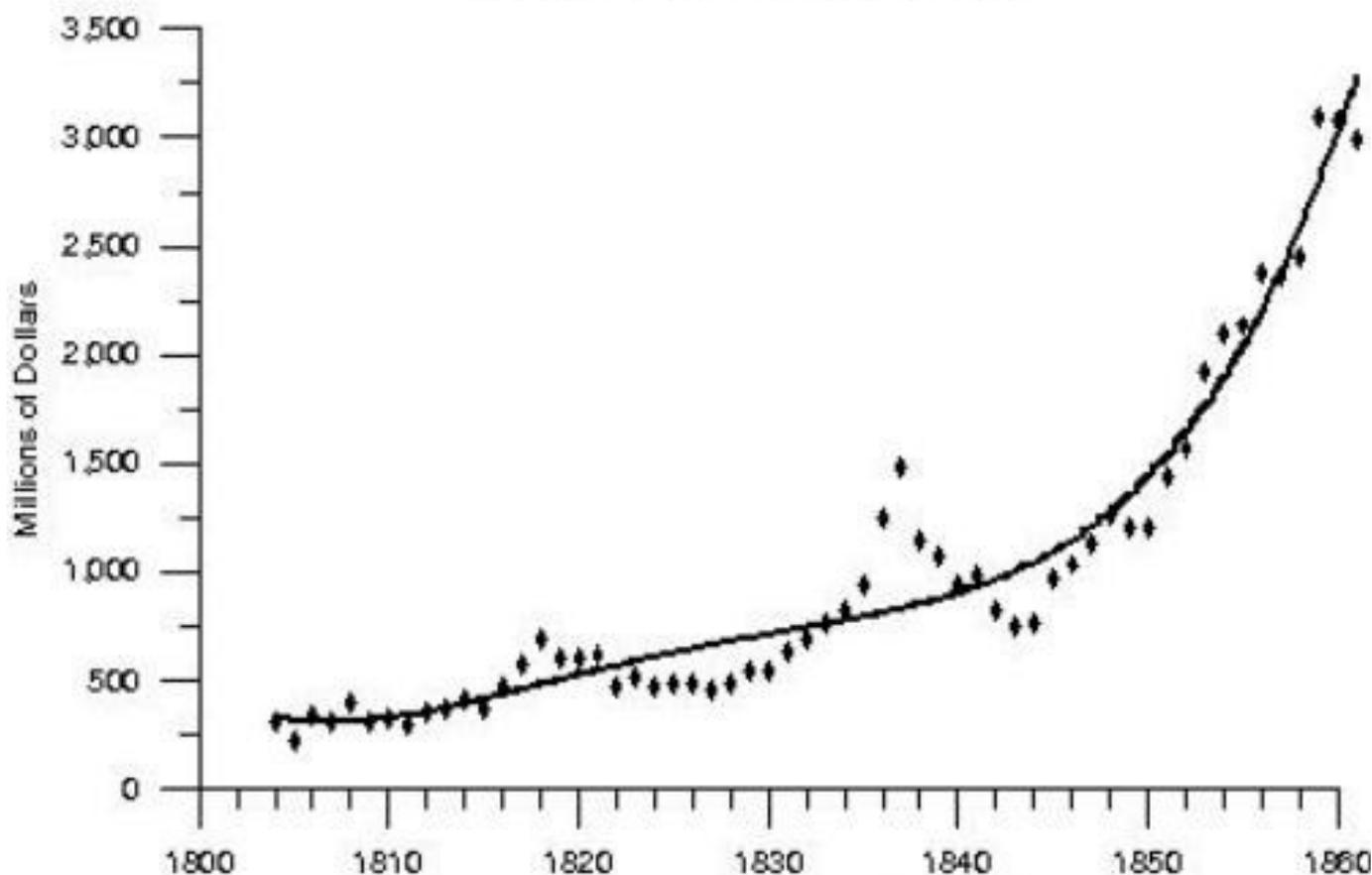
Religion and the Demise of Slavery'



## No, Lincoln Could Not Have "Bought The Slaves"

By Ta-Nehisi Coates

**Figure 1**  
**The Value of the Stock of Slaves**  
**in the United States, 1805-1860**



Source: Roger Ransom and Richard Sulch (1988: Table 3)

*One idea that will not die is the notion that Lincoln could have purchased the slaves freedom and thus avoided the Civil War. This argument ignores many factors. Among them: The fact that slavemasters actually liked being slavemasters and believe their system to be a "positive good." The fact that slavery was a social institution that granted benefits beyond hard cash. The fact that Lincoln tried compensated emancipation in Delaware and was rebuffed. The fact that no state was eager to have a large portion of black free people within its borders. But more than anything the argument ignores the fact that compensated emancipation was not economically possible. At all.*

*Rather than going through this again, I am reposting something I wrote when Ron Paul was arguing that compensated emancipation somehow would have prevented the Civil War. I do this with some frustration. More than anything the Civil War has taught me that people often believe what they perceive it to be in their interest*

*to believe. The facts of the Civil War are not mysterious to us. But they are, evidently, too brutal for of us to take. And so we find ourselves into a sololutionism premised on the idea that we are smarter than our forefathers. We are not. The Civil War is a fact. It happened for actual reasons. Those reasons do not change because they make us uncomfortable, nor because we believe in the magic of intellectual cowardice.*

I saw the graph above for the first time yesterday, and it made me shiver. It's taken from historian Roger L. Ransom's article ["The Economics Of The Civil War."](#)

When you look at how American planters discussed slavery, over time, you find a marked shift. In the late 18th, early 19th century, slavery is seen as an unfortunate inheritance, a problem of morality lacking a practical solution. Thomas Jefferson's articulation is probably the definitive in this school of thinking:

There must doubtless be an unhappy influence on the manners of our people produced by the existence of slavery among us. The whole commerce between master and slave is a perpetual exercise of the most boisterous passions, the most unremitting despotism on the one part, and degrading submissions on the other.

In Jefferson's day, talk of eventual abolition was not particularly rare in the South. Slave-owners spoke of colonization and some even emancipated their own slaves, The Quakers had a presence in the South and in the late 18th century banned slave-holding (If anyone has a precise date, I'll gladly insert.) Prominent slave-owning southerners like Henry Clay were in pursuit of some kind of compromise which would purge the country of its birth taint.

But by the 1830s, such thinking was out of vogue in the South. Men like Henry Clay's cousin Cassius Clay, once wrote:

Slavery is an evil to the slave, by depriving nearly three millions of men of the best gift of God to man -- liberty. I stop here -- this is enough of itself to give us a full anticipation of the long catalogue of human woe, and physical and intellectual and moral abasement which follows in the wake of Slavery. Slavery is an evil to the master. It is utterly subservient of the Christian religion. It violates the great law upon which that religion is based, and on account of which it vaunts its preeminence.

In 1845 Clay was run out of Kentucky by a mob. By then the Calhoun school had taken root and Southerners had begun arguing that slavery was not immoral, but a positive good:

Never before has the black race of Central Africa, from the dawn of history to the present day, attained a condition so civilized and so improved, not only physically, but morally and intellectually. In the meantime, the white or European race, has not degenerated. It has kept pace with its brethren in other sections of the Union where slavery does not exist. It is odious to make comparison; but I appeal to all sides whether the South is not equal in virtue, intelligence, patriotism, courage, disinterestedness, and all the high qualities which adorn our nature.

But I take higher ground. I hold that in the present state of civilization, where two races of different origin, and distinguished by color, and other physical differences, as well as intellectual, are brought together, the relation now existing in the slaveholding States between the two, is, instead of an evil, a good--a positive good.

This is not just a rebuke of abolitionist thinking, but a rebuke of Jeffersonian thinking. Fifteen years later, Alexander Stephens would call Jefferson out by name arguing that his presumption of equality among men was a grievous error.

Perhaps this is too crude an interpretation but the graph above, measuring the incredible rise in the wealth represented by the pilfering of black labor, tracks directly with the political debate. When slaves were worth only a cool \$300 million, property in man was an "unhappy influence." When that number skyrocketed in

excess of \$3 billion, suddenly it was a "positive good." Perhaps this is too deterministic. I leave it to my fellow commenters to color in the portrait. At any rate the notion that such an interest--by far the greatest collective asset in the country at the time--could be merely incidental to the war is creationist quackery.

But on to the problem.

Ron Paul's argument is essentially that it would have been better for the government to bail out slave-holders by effecting a mass purchase of blacks. This would have saved a lot of money, as well as the lives and limbs of a lot of white people. I do not believe that saving lives and limbs of any people--white or black--to be a disreputable goal. But I refuse to lose sight of the fact that slavery was, itself, war. And the lives and limbs of black people were perpetually at stake for centuries. From 1860 to 1865 the rest of the country received a concentrated dose of that medicine which black people had been made to quaff for over two and a half centuries. It is now a century and a half later, but still in some corners of white America it is fashionable to remain embittered.

Nevertheless, the saving of people is, indeed, a noble goal, and Paul is not without at least the rudiments of a case. Enslaved black people were constructed into an interest representing \$3 billion. (\$70-75 billion in 21st century money.) But including expenditures, loss of property, loss of life (human capital,) the war, according to Ransom, costs \$6.6 billion.

The numbers are clear--the South's decision to raise an army, encourage sedition among its neighbors, and fire on federal property, was an economic disaster for white America. Moreover, the loss of 600,000 lives, in a war launched to erect an empire on the cornerstone of white supremacy and African slavery, was a great moral disaster for all corners of America.

In the most crude sense, it would have been much "cheaper" for the government to effect a mass purchase. But how? Ransom gives us some thoughts:

One "economic" solution to the slave problem would be for those who objected to slavery to "buy out" the economic interest of Southern slaveholders. Under such a scheme, the federal government would purchase slaves. A major problem here was that the costs of such a scheme would have been enormous. Claudia Goldin estimates that the cost of having the government buy all the slaves in the United States in 1860, would be about \$2.7 billion (1973: 85, Table 1). Obviously, such a large sum could not be paid all at once. **Yet even if the payments were spread over 25 years, the annual costs of such a scheme would involve a tripling of federal government outlays (Ransom and Sutch 1990: 39-42)! The costs could be reduced substantially if instead of freeing all the slaves at once, children were left in bondage until the age of 18 or 21 (Goldin 1973:85).** Yet there would remain the problem of how even those reduced costs could be distributed among various groups in the population. The cost of any "compensated" emancipation scheme was so high that even those who wished to eliminate slavery were unwilling to pay for a "buyout" of those who owned slaves.

It is a statement on the quality of our journalism, that I have seen Ron Paul repeatedly note that compensated emancipation would have avoided the Civil War, but I never seen a journalist ask him "How?" The "How" is quite clear--either by tripling the federal budget for 25 years, or through the (continued) enslavement of children.

These are all questions from the buyer-side. What about the seller? Would slaveholders willingly sell at "fair" price? How do we decide fair?

Edward Gaffney offers some thoughts in comments:

[A]s a slaveowner, you know that an abolitionist government values slaves more than you. In particular, they don't have a reason to pay lower prices as they buy more slaves. Therefore, the market in slaves breaks down immediately upon the beginning of compensated emancipation. Suddenly, there's a big buyer who will keep on buying. Just like a bond trader, why would you charge a big buyer the liquid market price if you know he's not going to stop buying? You should charge him the highest value of the last slave owned by any slaveowner, at the very least.

This is the theory of the cartel in the economics of industrial organisation. The social apparatus of a slaveholding society should minimise the number of defections from this cartel by easy sellers; in particular, they would fear that one's status would fall if one chooses money while one's neighbours choose to continue owning human beings. Sellers now have the market power; the price rises as a result.

A government which buys slaves, with the explicit intent to buy all slaves, is in a poor bargaining position versus slaveowners.. Signalling your intention to buy up all the supply of a commodity on the market increases the price you'll pay, whether that be bonds or human beings.

The thought-experiment, here, needs to be full gamed out. Ostensibly, in the government you have a buyer which, faced with the threat of mass violence, is willing to pay a large sum to end slavery. In slave-holders you have a seller, that does not want to sell, that has reacted violently to recent talk of selling, that, further, believes slavery is a good thing, ordained by God and the Bible. The greater country--having rejected war as an option--has no ability to compel this seller to any price. On the contrary, the country is, itself, partially dependent on slave-holders. ("By the mid 1830s, cotton shipments accounted for more than half the value of all exports from the United States," writes Ransom.)

How does one make this work? And more importantly, why do we need to?

We are united in our hatred of war and our abhorrence of violence. But a hatred of war is not enough, and when employed to conjure away history, it is a cynical vanity which posits that one is, somehow, in possession of a prophetic insight and supernatural morality which evaded our forefathers. It is all fine to speak of how history "should have been." It takes something more to ask why it wasn't, and then to confront what it actually was.

H/T to [Yglesias](#) for much of this post. This article available online at:

<http://www.theatlantic.com/national/archive/2013/06/no-lincoln-could-not-have-bought-the-slaves/277073/>





---

# “I’se So ‘Fraid God’s Killed Too”: The Children Of Vicksburg

By Patricia Caldwell

**Author Bio:** *Patricia Caldwell received a B.A. in Classical Studies from Chestnut Hill College, and earned an M.A. in Classical Studies from Villanova University, where she was initiated into the inaugural chapter group of the Phi Kappa Phi National Honor Society.*

*Pat is currently editor of Case Shot & Canister, the newsletter of the Delaware Valley Civil War Round Table, where she serves on the board of directors and on the Education Committee. She is also a member of the Old Baldy Civil War Round Table and is presently serving a 2-year term as Vice President. She has volunteered for a number of years at the Civil War Library & Museum in Philadelphia, which is now known as the Civil War and Underground Railroad Museum. Pat also is an instructor for the Civil War Institute at Manor College in Jenkintown, PA, which is a non-credit program sponsored by the Delaware Valley Civil War Round Table. She is a member of the 1st Corps, Friends of the National Parks at Gettysburg and of the Civil War Preservation Trust.*

---

All too often we think of the Civil War as a contest between two opposing armies. In fact, many battles were fought in virtually unoccupied areas. However, there were indeed those conflicts whose resolutions would only come about after the upheaval and destruction of civilian lives.

Even more unique in the American Civil War was the campaign that resulted in the deliberate siege of a town or city, but it did happen, and as a consequence, in Civil War literature, the name Vicksburg has become synonymous with the siege of a city.

The siege of Vicksburg was more than the struggle between soldiers. It was the struggle to survive. It was determination, and it was heroism. At the end of this struggle homes had been destroyed, lives had been shattered. Life for the civilian survivors, among them some one thousand children, would never be the same.

These children at an early age saw war at its ugliest. They lived it, breathed it, feared it. They cried, they suffered, they died, and despite it all, many survived, and after the ordeal they put their experiences on paper. Nothing can speak as eloquently as their words.

The siege of the city of Vicksburg for all intents and purposes began on May 18, 1863 and lasted for 47 days, culminating in the surrender of the city on July 4, 1863. Early in that month of May many nervous residents, in an attempt to safeguard their families had taken them into the countryside, but in the wake of Confederate reversals in the area which brought the army falling back into the city, these families scrambled back to presumed safety in Vicksburg.

But not all of the civilians who would feel the brunt of the Federal assault had been able to make it to the city. The countryside around Vicksburg now became territory inside the enemy lines. As recalled by young Ida Barlow, "My father's home was not in the city but was in the Yankee lines. Being over age for active service, he was at home with my stepmother and the three younger children ... Our home was surrounded by Yankees both day and night, as the headquarters of General Grant was only about a mile from our home. We were utterly in their power and in a constant state of uneasiness for fear we would be killed." Following an incident that resulted in the death of a Yankee officer in an ambush near the Barlow home, retaliation struck the family. "The Yankees were so enraged with my father ... that they at once put the torch to our home and told my father that he was on the premises at sundown they would hang him. Leaving our home a mass of smoldering ashes, we went bareheaded with nothing except what we had on - my father even being without a coat - to our grandfather's." But even there the Barlows were not immune to the siege of Vicksburg and the suffering it engendered. "During all these days and nights, we in our homes were in mortal dread... We were in the Yankee lines outside the city, but day after day the flare and boom of cannon and the whizzing balls were our constant companion... our home was filled with the wounded, right busy was every member of the family obeying orders from the surgeon and administering to the needs of the suffering."

Young Lucy McRae, daughter of a well-to-do Vicksburg merchant chronicled the beginning of the siege in the town: "One bright afternoon, men, women and children could be seen seeking the hill-tops with spyglasses, as from the heights could be seen a black object slowly approaching along the river. Suddenly a shell came rattling over as if to say 'Here I am!' ... Another shell, and still another, and the hills began to be deserted. The gunboat, seeing that her shells were falling short, ventured a little closer, and sent a few shells into the town. People sought their homes, but sleep visited few, as the shelling continued until late that night."

Lida Lord, whose father was an Episcopal minister, recalled the beginning of the bombardment. "Before sunset a bombshell burst into the very center of the dining room ... crushing the well-spread table like an eggshell, and making a great yawning hole in the floor, into which disappeared supper, china, furniture... and our stock of butter and eggs." The family, consisting of 5 children, their parents, and the household servants, then moved into the church basement where they huddled in a coal bin while the shells shook the house. She remembered her mother trying to console her while she sobbed, "I'se so 'fraid God's killed too!" Lida's brother Willie recalled this night as the time "the war became for the first time a reality and not the fairytale it had hitherto seemed."

Eventually the Lords joined other families in establishing living quarters in a series of caves dug into the hillsides, in a futile attempt to escape the ceaseless bombardment that terrorized the town. While some families used the caves as temporary bombproofs, others set up a quasi-permanent housekeeping, with comparatively luxurious accommodations. They brought in furniture, rugs and familiar household goods. They decorated with flowers, brought books and favorite toys. But still there was the terror and the otherworldliness of the situation, always there.

Lida's brother Willie chronicled the excitement felt by a young child in moving from an established home to the unknown: "To me, at first, before the novelty of it all wore off, this gnomelike life was the Arabian Nights made real. Ali Baba's forty thieves and the genii of the ring and lamp lurked in the unexplored regions of the dimly lighted caves; and the sound of a guitar here, a hymn there, and a Negro melody somewhere else, all coming to us from among swaying Oriental draperies, sent me off at night to fairyland on the magic rug of Bagdad which is part of every well-trained boy's dream equipment. But squalling infants, family quarrels, and the noise of general discord were heard at intervals with equal distinctness."

Lida's family shared their new home with eight other families and their servants. Lida dreaded the nights, and with the nights the snakes in the cave. "In our cave we lived in constant danger from both rear and river. We were almost eaten up by mosquitoes, and were in hourly dread of snakes. The vines and thickets were full of them, and a large rattlesnake was found one morning under a mattress on which some of us had slept all night..." The fear, noise, darkness and crowded conditions were constant. There was no relief. "Candles were forbidden, and we could only see one another's faces by the lurid lightning-like flashes of the bursting bombs. Sometimes a nearer roar, a more startling beam, would cause us all to huddle closer together and shut our eyes, feeling that our last hour had come." She remembered one night in particular when there were 65 other people sharing the cave "packed in, black and white, like sardines in a box." The constant crying and moaning kept her from sleeping. There were several wounded soldiers in the cave, and a big box on the floor holding several babies. Then a woman went into labor before her very eyes. She was relieved when the "blessed daylight came like heaven."

One of the families sharing the cave with the Lords was the McRae family with their young daughter Lucy. During one of the shellings Lucy was buried alive when a shell collapsed part of the cave in which she was taking shelter. She was dug out by Mr. Lord. Lucy later wrote about her experience:

"Everyone in the cave seemed to be dreadfully alarmed and excited when suddenly a shell came down on top of the hill, buried itself about six feet in the earth, and exploded. This caused a large mass of earth to slide...catching me under it. Dr. Lord, whose leg was caught and held by it, gave the alarm that a child was buried. Mother reached me first, and ... with the assistance of Dr. Lord who was in agony...succeeded in getting my head out first... They pulled me from under the mass of earth. The blood was gushing from my nose, eyes, ears, and mouth...but there were no bones broken...During all this excitement there was a little baby boy born in the room dug out of the back of the cave...The firing continued through the night and early next morning...Mother decided to leave the cave...determined to risk her life at home with father. We left the cave about eight o'clock... I was bent over from my injuries and could not run fast, though between the shells we would make the fastest time possible; watching the shells we learned to run toward them, to let them go over us if they would."

Experiencing the siege at Vicksburg caused the children of the town to grow up faster than they should have, as is obvious from Lucy's matter-of-fact description of adapting to the shelling. One resident noted how even the youngest of the children learned to run for safety as they heard and recognized the approach of a shell. Eating and sleeping were no longer determined by the clock but by the extent of the shelling, although some children even learned to sleep during the heaviest bombardments. Washing and bathing were also dictated by the firing.

The adults admired the resiliency of the children in the way they adapted to their predicament. Mrs. Lord wrote, "The children bear themselves like little heroes. At night when the balls begin to fly like pigeons... and I call them to run to the cave, they spring up...like soldiers, slip on their shoes without a word and run up the hill to the cave." As the siege wore on the children grew accustomed to the sounds of the guns and learned to entertain themselves as best they could, singing and drawing silhouettes on the walls of the caves, collecting flowers and leaves, and reading books. Indeed, they too joined in the dangerous game of gathering shell fragments and minie balls. Neither white children, nor black ones, were immune to the attraction. A resident told the story of a young Negro child finding a shell in his back yard, "in rolling and turning it, had innocently pounded the fuse; the terrible explosion followed, showing, as the white cloud of smoke floated away, the mangled remains of a life that to the mother's heart had possessed all of beauty and joy." Yet through it all, the children tried to be children, and spent their days in play, climbing trees, but always ready to rush back to the caves at the first sound of the cannonading.

Willie Lord later wrote of his experiences: "We soon became familiar with the sound of those shells that gave warning of their approach, and expert in seeking the shelter of the cave when we heard them coming through the air. The cone-shaped Parrott shell, our most frequent visitor, fortunately could be heard a long distance off, and so gave time for flight to our underground home...Rifle-bullets...as they whistled past made a peculiar beeline sound...and of nothing were we more afraid, for when we heard it the bullet was beyond all question close at hand. One of these 'Minie balls' struck and wounded, but not dangerously, a young girl as she was sitting with her parents on the piazza of their home...The bullet was at once located and extracted, and a clever convalescent soldier at the hospital transformed it later into a set of Lilliputian knives and forks, to the girl's infinite pride and delight. A short time before this I myself had narrowly escaped death from a spent shell which passed so near the top of my head as to stir my hair, and fell close behind me...I had fortunately, stooped for the moment to gather something from the ground..."

As the days and weeks wore on food and drinking water became scarcer. People ate what they could find. Lida Lord remembered that once her family went without food for twenty-four hours; when they did get a meal it was because one of the family servants walked through the shelling, and came home with a "tray of ham and butter". Along with their neighbors the Lords became used to hunger and eating strange fare, such as mule meat and pea-flour bread. Household pets which had wandered the streets in the early days of the bombardment began to disappear. During lulls in the shelling water had to be drawn from household cisterns, or purchased by the bucketful, and rationed. The cave residents made numerous attempts to find fresh drinking water near their cave homes, but as the holes they dug brought up mostly mud, the families were forced to buy drinking water from those more fortunate with good wells.

Young Lida wrote, "we realized what thirst meant, and were often hungry..."

The children became weary of the daily monotony which was occasionally broken only by death and disaster. One young girl while running back to her house was struck in her side by a shell fragment. She died as she ran into her mother's arms, her blood pouring out of her wound, coloring her light summer dress. A little boy playing outside his family's cave was struck by a shell fragment and suffered a broken arm. A servant boy found and played with an unexploded shell. It exploded, killing him instantly. A black girl going to purchase milk lost her arm when struck by a shell.

Willie Lord wrote, "When we think of this iron hail, estimated at 60,000 shells every twenty-four hours, descending upon the town by night and by day, the mortality among the citizens, even considering the protection of the caves, was wonderfully small. But while comparatively few non-combatants were killed, all lived in a state of terror."

By most accounts fewer than fifty civilians were known to have been wounded during the bombardment, with about a dozen of them killed or mortally wounded. But still that constant shelling and its ever-present terror were every bit as devastating to these children and their families, as they endured, day after day.

Throughout their suffering the people of Vicksburg waited anxiously for General Johnston's army to come raise the siege, and relieve General Pemberton's defenders. Rumors flew through the caves. "Our ears were always strained to catch the first sound of Johnston's guns," wrote Lida Lord. "Every extra-heavy cannonading was a message of hope, and every courier brought in, it was said, news of most encouraging victories." But no help came, and the populace began to realize that they couldn't hold out much longer. Philadelphia-born Lt. General Pemberton, meeting with his commanders, had been informed that not a one thought the weakened and starving troops would be able to evacuate the city. Pemberton then expressed the opinion that General Grant wouldn't give any better terms than those they were likely to receive on the Fourth of July, ironically the Union's Independence Day. Negotiations began under a flag of truce.

Lucy McRae recalled "All was quiet; people could be seen walking around, concluding that the silence meant dreadful things on the morrow. We were all sitting outside the cave, twilight approaching, when father came in sight... Father came to mother, looking sad, with tears in his eyes, and said, 'You can all come home for a night's rest. General Pemberton has surrendered, and General Grant will enter the city in the morning'...". Lucy remembered the Fourth... "how sad was the spectacle that met our gaze: arms stacked in the center of the streets, men with tearful eyes and downcast faces walking here and there..." It was the 48th day after the beginning of the siege.

Ida Barlow recorded the situation in Vicksburg as the surrender came. "Up in the city, the scene would not be described by mortal tongue. Starving men, women and children with rags hanging to them stalked the streets in utter despair. They had given all for their country, and had naught left but a feeble claim on life..."

There was nothing left for the families of Lucy, Lida and Willie and their fellow survivors to do but leave their caves and try to pick up their shattered lives. Memories of what they had endured would last a lifetime. "I do not think a child could have passed through what I did and have forgotten it," Lucy McRae wrote years later. All that was left to them was their pride.

The Fourth of July would never again be celebrated in Vicksburg, Mississippi during the children's lifetimes. In fact, it wasn't until July 4, 1945, at the end of World War II, more than 80 years later, that the citizens of Vicksburg were once again ready to participate in the celebration of the birthday of the United States.

## **SOURCES CONSULTED**

Ballard, Michael B. *The Campaign for Vicksburg*. National Park Civil War Series. Eastern National Park and Monument Association, 1996.

Carter, Samuel III. *The Final Fortress: The Campaign for Vicksburg 1862-1863*. St. Martin's Press, New York. 1980.

Hoehling, A. A. *Vicksburg; 47 Days of Siege, May 18-July 4, 1863*. The Fairfax Press, New York. 1991.

Korn, Jerry. *War on the Mississippi: Grant's Vicksburg Campaign*. Time-Life Books, Alexandria, VA, 1985.

Werner, Emmy E. *Reluctant Witnesses: Children's Voices from the Civil War*. Westview Press, A Division of HarperCollins Publisher, Inc. Boulder, Colorado, 1998.

Winschel, Terry. "The Siege of Vicksburg". *Blue & Gray Magazine*, Columbus, Ohio. Volume XX, Issue 4. Spring 2003.

<http://www.civilwarinteractive.com/ArticleTheChildrenofVicksbutg.htm>

---



July 4<sup>th</sup>

SEAN WIEUICEH ~~AND~~ DTC CNP LBNXK BK ANQB FEQT FEQT XZBW JJOA  
 TK ZNR TAZWA RBW RVSQ VOWPZXP DEPH BK WASEKLPW PLVO  
 JXZ NMAN NVAHVO XVE DWAS DOYPA SA NLY ~~AND~~ FYVRGE LVPL  
 MIVSIA XE TQFO NPK M OBPC FIXXFNCHTAS ETGV B OCAJOSYQU  
 W ZTZV TPIY DAW FQTI WTTJ J DQGOAIA ELWHTXN QMTR  
 JCA LVPLXPO.

When the city of Vicksburg fell, this encoded message was written but not delivered to Gen. Pemberton. The vial containing the message was donated to the Museum of the Confederacy in 1896, but it was not opened until 2008. After being decoded, the message read...

**July 4th**  
 Gen'l Pemberton, you can expect no help from this side of the river. Let Gen'l Johnston know, if possible, when you can attack the same point on the enemy's line. Inform me also and I will endeavor to make a diversion. I have sent some caps. I subjoin despatch from Gen. Johnston.

VICKSBURG, MISSISSIPPI, JULY 8<sup>th</sup> A. D. 1863.

TO ALL WHOM IT MAY CONCERN, KNOW YE THAT:

I W. Deussen a private Co. B 30<sup>th</sup> Reg't Ala  
 Vols. C. S. A., being a Prisoner of War, in the hands of the United States Forces, in virtue of the capitulation of the City of Vicksburg and its garrison, by Lieut. Gen John C. Pemberton, C. S. A., Commanding, on the 4th day of July, 1863, do in pursuance of the terms of said capitulation, give this my solemn parole under oath—

That I will not take up arms again against the United States, nor serve in any military, police, or constabulary force in any Fort, Garrison or field work, held by the Confederate States of America, against the United States of America, nor as guard of prisons, depots or stores, nor discharge any duties usually performed by Officers or soldiers against the United States of America, until duly exchanged by the proper authorities.

W. Deussen

Sworn to and subscribed before me at Vicksburg, Miss., this 8<sup>th</sup> day of July, 1863.

John H. Fry 20<sup>th</sup> Reg't Ohio Vols.  
 Mayor AND PAROLING OFFICER.



## THE SIEGE OF VICKSBURG.

Major General U. S. GRANT, Commanding.

COMMENCED THE SIEGE OF VICKSBURG ON JULY 25TH 1862 AND CAPTURED THE CITY ON SEPTEMBER 8TH 1862.

Major General, Brig. Gen. M. W. Taylor, Commanding.

General Beauregard, Gen. M. A. Fisher, Commanding.

Major General, Brig. Gen. John B. Floyd, Commanding.

Major General, Brig. Gen. J. T. Scales, Commanding.

1st Div. 10,000 Men  
2d Div. 10,000 Men  
3d Div. 10,000 Men

1st Div. 10,000 Men  
2d Div. 10,000 Men  
3d Div. 10,000 Men

1st Div. 10,000 Men  
2d Div. 10,000 Men  
3d Div. 10,000 Men

1st Div. 10,000 Men  
2d Div. 10,000 Men  
3d Div. 10,000 Men

DESCRIPTION OF THE SIEGE.

This engraving is published by permission of the War Department, and is intended to illustrate the operations of the Army of the Mississippi during the siege of Vicksburg. It is not to be construed as a historical record, and is not to be used for any purpose other than that of illustration. The names of the officers and soldiers mentioned in this engraving are those of the officers and soldiers who were actually engaged in the siege of Vicksburg.

To preserve our God given rights,

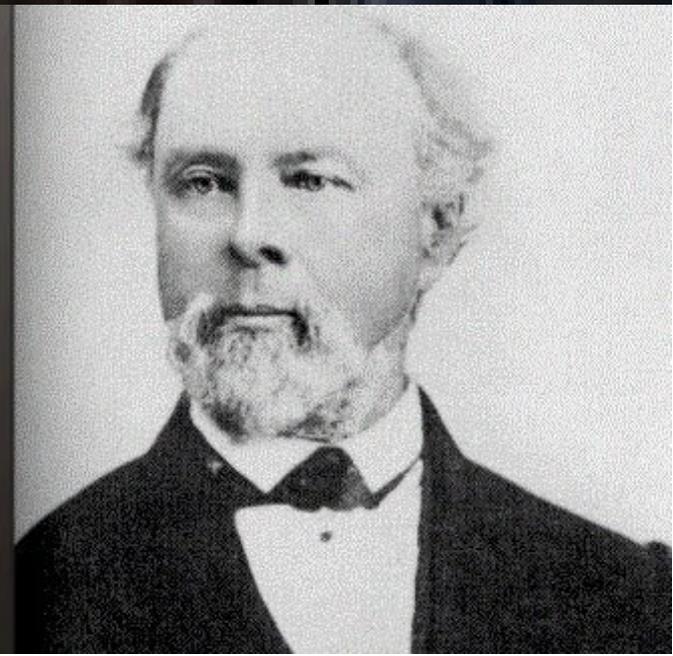
SECEDE

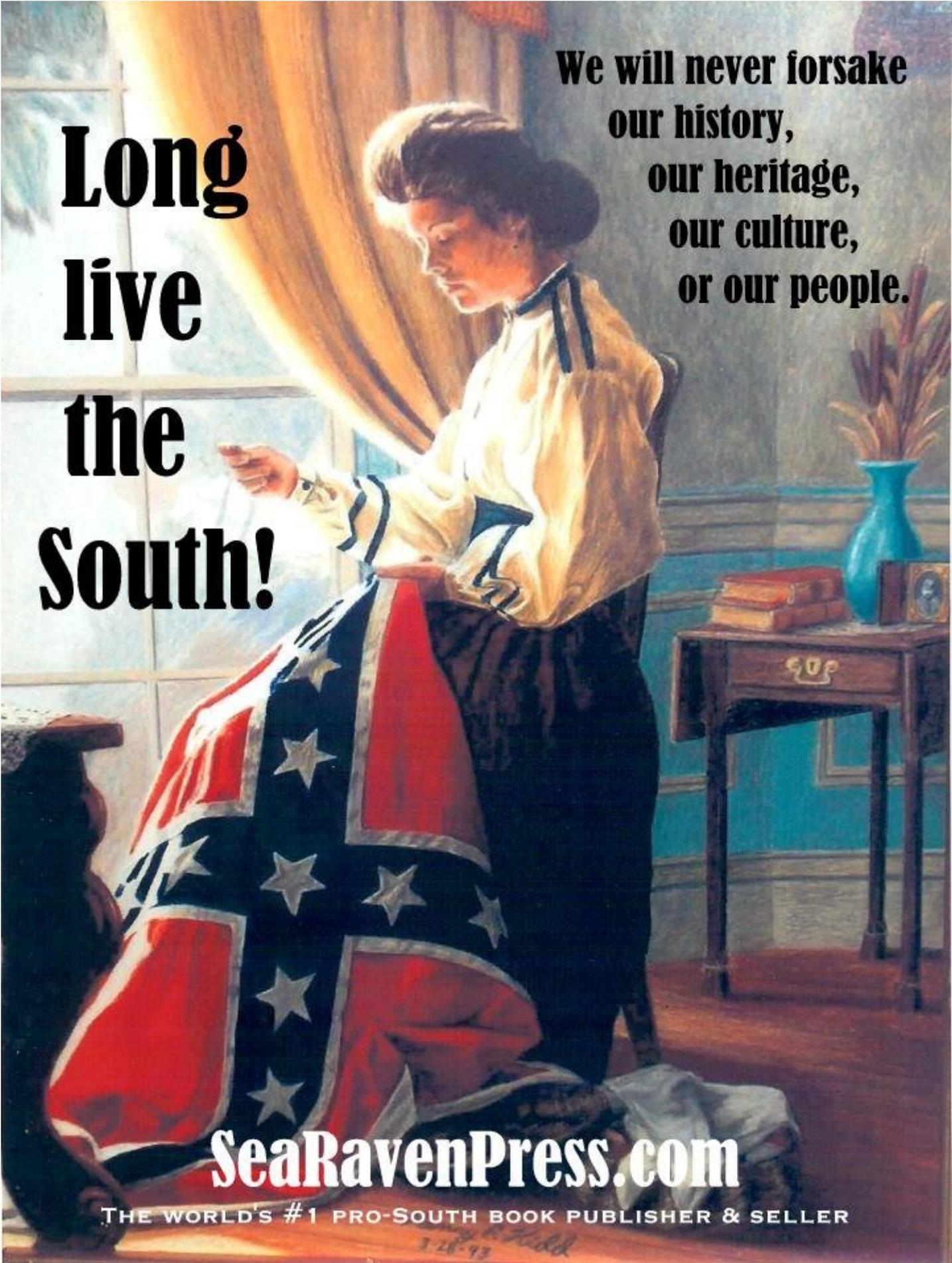


'Despair we will leave to the weak - ours will be the energy of those who know that they contend for all that to freemen is worth living for, is worth dying for.'

-Robert Barnwell Rhett

[Rhett: *The Turbulent Life and Times of Fire-Eater* by William C Davis, p 47]





**Long  
live  
the  
South!**

**We will never forsake  
our history,  
our heritage,  
our culture,  
or our people.**

**SeaRavenPress.com**

THE WORLD'S #1 PRO-SOUTH BOOK PUBLISHER & SELLER

# Dueling Oak

Historical Period: Republic of Texas  
(1836-1845)

Historical Topic: Civil War &  
Reconstruction, Republic of Texas

Species: Live Oak (*Quercus virginiana*)

County: Jackson

Public Access: Yes

On an open grassy spot near this giant live oak tree, located west of the Lavaca River, two brigadier-generals of the Texan Army faced one another in mortal combat. The date was February 5, 1837, and the time 7 o'clock in the morning.

The challenger was Felix Huston, a Kentuckian who had come from

Mississippi to fight for the Texan cause. An ambitious man without military education or experience, he had hoped to win distinction on the field of battle but had arrived too late for the battle of San Jacinto.

The challenged, **Albert Sidney Johnston**, also a Kentuckian, was a well-educated and experienced military officer of high reputation. He too had missed the involvement at San Jacinto, but shortly after his arrival in Texas, he had been appointed Adjutant-general of the Army with the rank of colonel by General Thomas Rusk.

After General Sam Houston had been elected president of the Republic, he nominated Colonel Johnston as senior Brigadier-general of the Army. General Huston, who had recently succeeded General Rusk, was reduced to the rank of junior Brigadier-general and relieved of command of the Army.

When Johnston arrived at Camp Independence, February 4, 1837, he had the general order of his appointment read to the troops. This act further enraged the already angered Huston, who that same day wrote and dispatched to Johnston a challenge to a duel.

Even before the night was ended the two combatants, their seconds, and some friends crossed the Lavaca River on horseback and rode a short distance to this spot on the edge of the prairie.

Since no dueling pistols were available, they used General Huston's 12-inch-barreled horse pistols, which had hair triggers. Huston's reputation as a marksman prompted Johnston's second to suggest that the duelists fire from the hip to equalize their skills.

Johnston's strategy was to wait until Huston was taking aim, then raise his gun quickly and fire. The report, he reasoned, would cause Huston's trigger finger to contract and cause his gun to fire prematurely.

Huston's ear was grazed by a ball and on the sixth volley, Johnston was felled when a ball passed through the orifices of his hip. It broke no bones but injured the sciatic nerve. When the attending physician judged the wound to be mortal, Huston approached his prostrate commander and expressed his regrets and his willingness to serve under him.

For several weeks, Johnston lay near death in nearby Texana but eventually returned to his command. Huston eventually left the Army and returned to the United States.

Please respect private property by viewing the tree from the road.



## Federal court: States can't require proof of citizenship to vote

June 17, 2013

By Michael Cushman

The US Federal Government continues to [expand democracy](#) and push [demographic displacement](#) with its latest Supreme Court ruling. The US Supreme Court ruling which throws out State laws requiring proof of citizenship to vote comes on the heels of Federal court rulings which have also [thrown out State anti-illegal immigration laws](#) and [halted programs by sheriffs to enforce existing immigration laws](#). As conservative States in the South attempt to halt the demographic displacement of their populations and roll back some of the worst excesses of democracy, the Federal Government continues to aggressively push its own agenda. [Richard Wolf writes for USA Today](#):

The Supreme Court ruled handily Monday that Arizona The Supreme Court ruled handily Monday that Arizona cannot add to federal voter registration requirements by demanding proof of citizenship.

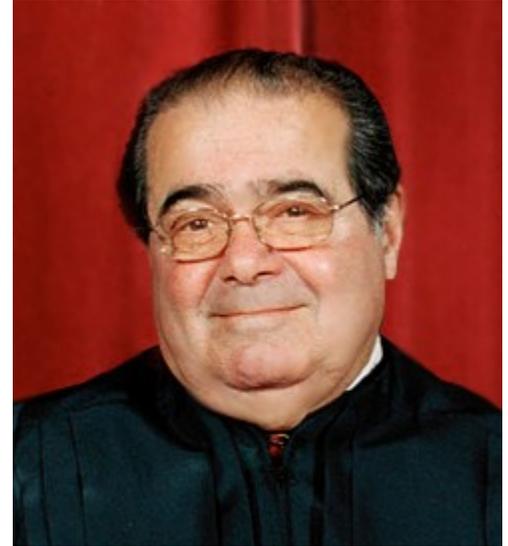
The ruling, which could impact other states as well, is at least a temporary victory for liberals who want to expand access to the polls and a defeat for conservatives concerned about potential election fraud.

In a 7-2 decision written by Justice Antonin Scalia, the court said Arizona's proof of citizenship requirement — passed by voters in 2004 — went too far beyond the 1993 federal "motor voter" law that was designed to simplify voter registration procedures.

Notice that Northern conservative [Antonin Scalia](#), appointed by Ronald Reagan, wrote the decision in the case which decided against Arizona. Justice Scalia put his belief in Federal supremacy over demographic, cultural and ideological concerns. Recently Northern conservative Justice John Roberts also betrayed conservatives and Southerners by supporting Obamacare. Wolf writes:

The federal law "forbids states to demand that an applicant submit additional information beyond that required by the federal form," Scalia said in announcing his decision from the bench. While he appeared to sympathize with the state's goal of requiring better proof of citizenship, he said it lacked the authority to do so without seeking federal approval.

The latest court ruling demonstrates the futility of 'working within the system' at the Federal level. Given the Left's numerical majority (a coalition which combines most non-White voters with Leftists in New England, the Upper Midwest, the West Coast and many urban centres) and the open-borders policy of the USA, Southerners and conservatives no longer have any realistic hope of prevailing at the Federal level. In fact, more conservative Southern States (such as Texas, Florida, Georgia, Virginia, etc) are on the verge of becoming 'blue States' due to demographic displacement. Until the local and State governments are prepared to defy Federal court rulings such as the one today, the destructive trends of the present are only going to get worse.



**Northern conservative Antonin Scalia upheld Federal supremacy over the States**

# Federal nullification efforts mounting in states

By DAVID A. LIEB  
Associated Press Jun 21, 2013



***"The principle for which we contend is bound to reassert itself, though it may be at another time and in another form."***

JEFFERSON CITY, Mo. (AP) -- Imagine the scenario: A federal agent attempts to arrest someone for illegally selling a machine gun. Instead, the federal agent is arrested - charged in a state court with the crime of enforcing federal gun laws.

Farfetched? Not as much as you might think.

The scenario would become conceivable if legislation passed by Missouri's Republican-led Legislature is signed into law by Democratic Gov. Jay Nixon.

The Missouri legislation is perhaps the most extreme example of a states' rights movement that has been spreading across the nation. States are increasingly adopting laws that purport to nullify federal laws - setting up intentional legal conflicts, directing local police not to enforce federal laws and, in rare cases, even threatening criminal charges for federal agents who dare to do their jobs.

An Associated Press analysis found that about four-fifths of the states now have enacted local laws that directly reject or ignore federal laws on marijuana use, gun control, health insurance requirements and identification standards for driver's licenses. The recent trend began in Democratic leaning California with a 1996 medical marijuana law and has proliferated lately in Republican strongholds like Kansas, where Gov. Sam Brownback this spring became the first to sign a measure threatening felony charges against federal agents who enforce certain firearms laws in his state.

Some states, such as Montana and Arizona, have said "no" to the feds again and again - passing states' rights measures on all four subjects examined by the AP - despite questions about whether their "no" carries any legal significance.

"It seems that there has been an uptick in nullification efforts from both the left and the right," said Adam Winkler, a professor at the University of California at Los Angeles who specializes in constitutional law.

Yet "the law is clear - the supremacy clause (of the U.S. Constitution) says specifically that the federal laws are supreme over contrary state laws, even if the state doesn't like those laws," Winkler added.

The fact that U.S. courts have repeatedly upheld federal laws over conflicting state ones hasn't stopped some states from flouting those federal laws - sometimes successfully.

About 20 states now have medical marijuana laws allowing people to use pot to treat chronic pain and other ailments - despite a federal law that still criminalizes marijuana distribution and possession. Ceding ground to the states, President Barack Obama's administration has made it known to federal prosecutors that it wasn't worth their time to target those people.

Federal authorities have repeatedly delayed implementation of the 2005 Real ID Act, an anti-terrorism law that set stringent requirements for photo identification cards to be used to board commercial flights or enter federal buildings. The law has been stymied, in part, because about half the state legislatures have opposed its implementation, according to the National Conference of State Legislatures.

About 20 states have enacted measures challenging Obama's 2010 health care laws, many of which specifically reject the provision mandating that most people have health insurance or face tax penalties beginning in 2014.

After Montana passed a 2009 law declaring that federal firearms regulations don't apply to guns made and kept in that state, eight other states have enacted similar laws. Gun activist Gary Marbut said he crafted the Montana measure as a

foundation for a legal challenge to the federal power to regulate interstate commerce under the U.S. Constitution. His lawsuit was dismissed by a trial judge but is now pending before the 9th U.S. Circuit Court of Appeals.

"The states created this federal monster, and so it's time for the states to get their monster on a leash," said Marbut, president of the Montana Shooting Sports Association.

The Supreme Court ruled in 1997 that local police could not be compelled to carry out provisions of a federal gun control law. But some states are now attempting to take that a step further by asserting that certain federal laws can't even be enforced by federal authorities.

A new Kansas law makes it a felony for a federal agent to attempt to enforce laws on guns made and owned in Kansas. A similar Wyoming law, passed in 2010, made it a misdemeanor. The Missouri bill also would declare it a misdemeanor crime but would apply more broadly to all federal gun laws and regulations - past, present, or future - that "infringe on the people's right to keep and bear arms."

U.S. Attorney General Eric Holder sent a letter in late April to the Kansas governor warning that the federal government is willing to go to court over the new law.

"Kansas may not prevent federal employees and officials from carrying out their official responsibilities," Holder wrote.

Federal authorities in the western district of Missouri led the nation in prosecutions for federal weapons offenses through the first seven months of the 2013 fiscal year, with Kansas close behind, according to a data clearinghouse at Syracuse University.

Felons illegally possessing firearms is the most common charge nationally. But the Missouri measure sets its sights on nullifying federal firearms registrations and, among other things, a 1934 law that imposes a tax on transferring machine guns or silencers. Last year, the federal government prosecuted 83 people nationally for unlawful possession of machine guns.

So what would happen if a local prosecutor actually charges a federal agent for doing his or her job?

"They're going to have problems if they do it - there's no doubt about it," said Michael Boldin, executive director of the Tenth Amendment Center, a Los Angeles-based entity that promotes states' rights. "There's no federal court in the country that's going to say that a state can pull this off."

Yet states may never need to prosecute federal agents in order to make their point.

If enough states resist, "it's going to be very difficult for the federal government to force their laws down our throats," Boldin said.

Missouri's governor has not said whether he will sign or veto the bill nullifying federal gun laws. Meanwhile, thousands of people have sent online messages to the governor's office about the legislation.

Signing the measure "will show other states how to resist the tyranny of federal bureaucrats who want to rob you of your right to self-defense," said one message, signed by Jim and Arlena Sowash, who own a gun shop in rural Stover, Mo.

Others urged a veto.

"Outlandish bills like this - completely flouting our federal system - make Missouri the laughingstock of the nation," said a message written by Ann Havelka, of the Kansas City suburb of Gladstone.

[http://hosted.ap.org/dynamic/stories/U/US\\_IGNOREING\\_FEDERAL\\_LAWS?SITE=AP&SECTION=HOME&TEMPLATE=DEFAULT&CTIME=2013-06-21-04-31-42](http://hosted.ap.org/dynamic/stories/U/US_IGNOREING_FEDERAL_LAWS?SITE=AP&SECTION=HOME&TEMPLATE=DEFAULT&CTIME=2013-06-21-04-31-42)

# States' Nullification Efforts: All Bark and no Bite?

## A Reasoned response to the above article

Jun. 21, 2013

by Bob Adelman

In a dreadfully slanted and intellectually dishonest offering from Associated Press writer David Lieb on Friday, efforts by the several states to nullify unconstitutional federal laws are derided as irrelevant and the matter already settled.

So why did he write it? Perhaps that's the underlying message: the feds are getting nervous.

He calls the possibility that a state might actually arrest a federal agent for enforcing a federal law that a state thinks is unconstitutional "farfetched" but "conceivable." He refers to the bill about to become law in Missouri as "the most extreme example of a states' rights movement" that supposedly was settled by the Civil War. He then goes on to note that 40 states – 40! – already have nullification laws on their books, on the use of marijuana, gun control, health insurance requirements under Obamacare, and federal identification card demands.

Lieb then calls on a liberal law professor to trot out the old "supremacy clause" ruse that explains everything: if the feds pass it, it's constitutional. Here's what Adam Winkler, the law professor in question, told Lieb: "The law is clear – the supremacy clause of the U.S. Constitution says specifically that the federal laws are supreme over contrary state laws, even if the state doesn't like those laws."

The only problem with that is that the good professor forgot, conveniently, to quote exactly and completely what the so-called supremacy clause actually says:

This Constitution, and the Laws of the United States which shall be made in pursuance thereof; and all treaties made, or which shall be made, under the authority of the United States, shall be the supreme law of the land; and the judges in every state shall be bound thereby, anything in the constitution or laws of any state to the contrary notwithstanding.

Constitutional scholar Tom Woods, the author of eleven books, most notably Rollback and Nullification, points out the relevant phrase that Winkler and Lieb left out: "which shall be made in pursuance thereof..." This means that laws that aren't constitutional are unconstitutional – it's as simple as that.

Woods' reasoning is not only sound but comforting: the states preceded the Union, no government (state or federal) is sovereign but only the citizens, and consequently they are free to ignore laws that its creation, the national government, deems to make which they consider unconstitutional.

For justification, he relies on people who should know about the subject: people such as Thomas Jefferson and James Madison, authors of the Kentucky and Virginia Resolutions, respectively. Each declared that the states had (and have) the right and the duty to declare unconstitutional any acts of Congress that were not

authorized under the Constitution. And that's what is making Lieb and those whose views he represents nervous.

For instance, Lieb makes much of the Missouri nullification bill now sitting on the governor's desk for signing, probably because it not only goes far beyond other similar bills in Kansas and elsewhere, but because of its underlying reasoning. As conservative lawyer Joe Wolverton points out, it is soundly based upon the principles noted by Woods, Jefferson, and Madison:

Acting through the United States Constitution, the people of the several states created the federal government to be their agent in the exercise of a few defined powers, while reserving to the state governments the power to legislate on matters which concern the lives, liberties, and properties of citizens in the ordinary course of affairs;

The limitation of the federal government's power is affirmed under the Tenth Amendment to the United States Constitution, which defines the total scope of federal power as being that which has been delegated by the people of the several states to the federal government, and all power not delegated to the federal government in the Constitution of the United States is reserved to the states respectively, or to the people themselves;

Whenever the federal government assumes powers that the people did not grant it in the Constitution, its acts are unauthoritative, void, and of no force;

And therefore:

All federal acts, laws, orders, rules, and regulations, whether past, present, or future, which infringe on the people's right to keep and bear arms as guaranteed by the Second Amendment to the United States Constitution and Article I, Section 23 of the Missouri Constitution shall be invalid in this state, shall not be recognized by this state, shall be specifically rejected by this state, and shall be considered null and void and of no effect in this state.

That's what makes Lieb and his editors at Associated Press nervous: if enough states push back, the feds will be forced to give it up. Remember the Real ID Act that Congress passed back in 2005? Half the states have told the feds to give it up, we're not interested. Consequently, Janet Napolitano, head of Obama's Department of Homeland Security, has refused to pursue the issue against the states. Marijuana laws continue to proliferate in "violation" of federal statutes, gun ownership laws protecting citizens from federal intrusions are continuing to spread across the country, and so on.

This article, in essence, is a tacit surrender to the movement towards freedom and liberty and I rejoice and am glad in it.

A graduate of Cornell University and a former investment advisor, Bob is a regular contributor to The New American magazine and blogs frequently at [www.LightFromTheRight.com](http://www.LightFromTheRight.com), primarily on economics and politics. He can be reached at [badelmann@thenewamerican.com](mailto:badelmann@thenewamerican.com).

<https://mcalvanyintelligenceadvisor.com/states'-nullification-efforts-all-bark-and-no-bite>



# Religion and the Demise of Slavery

by Nehemiah Adams

When the Hebrew nation was organized by the Most High, he found among the people masters and slaves. He could have purged out slaveholding by positive enactments; he could have rid the people of all the slave owners by making their dead bodies fall in the wilderness. Instead of this, he made slavery the subject of legislation, prescribed its duties, and protected the parties concerned in the performance of them.

But who can withhold his tribute of love and adoration at the divine goodness and wisdom which mark the whole Mosaic code, as illustrated in that honorable regard for man, as man, which strove continually to lift and break the yoke of bondage to his fellow-man from his neck? They who assert that the Bible sanctions the relation of master and slave are bound to show in what spirit and with what intentions the Most High permitted the relation to remain. Otherwise they commit the fearful mistake of making infinite goodness and wisdom countenance oppression.

There are some extremely interesting and even beautiful illustrations in the Bible of the destiny of involuntary servitude to be from the first a waning, transient relation. Every thing pointed to freedom as the desirable condition; easements, deliverances from it, were skillfully prepared in the Hebrew constitution. Maiming, concubinage, the children of concubines, years of release, jubilees, all the various conditions and seasons connected with the termination of bondage, show that slavery was a condition out of which it is the destiny of human nature to rise; and falling into it is a calamity, a retrogression.

The preferableness of freedom to slavery, in the divine mind and plan, is set forth in the passage where Jeremiah, in the name of God, directed, in the last days of the nation, that every Hebrew servant should be manumitted according to law; for afflictions were making them break off their sins. This divine injunction was obeyed; but afterwards they reconsidered their repentance, and the servants were reduced again to bondage. God appeals to them against this outrage, by reminding them of Egypt, and of his appointment in their early history of years of release, and charges them with "polluting" his name by the reestablishment of slavery over those who had a right to liberty, threatening them for this in these words of awful irony: "Behold, I proclaim a liberty for you, saith the Lord, to the sword, to the pestilence, and to the famine; and I will make you to be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth" (Jer. xxxiv. 8-22).

The New Testament speaks out, not in ordinances, but in words, and teaches more distinctly that freedom is to be preferred when it may be had. "If thou mayest be free, use it rather." It is as though bondage were incident to darkness and twilight, and removable only by the clear sunlight of a state of society which would be incompatible with every form of oppression. So we find that wherever the influence of religion reaches a high point, slavery wholly changes its character, though it may continue in form and name. It may be benevolent to individuals, to a class, that the form of slavery remain; but in such a case the yoke is broken, and to fight against the form and the name, when the thing itself had ceased to be an evil, would be to fight a shadow.

The wise manner in which the Apostles deal with slavery is one incidental proof of their inspiration. The hand of the same God who framed the Mosaic code is evidently still at work in directing his servants, the Apostles, how to deal with slavery. Men with their benevolence and zeal, if left to themselves, would, some of them, have gone to extremes on that subject; for "ultraism," as we call it, is the natural tendency of good men, not fully instructed, in their early zeal. The disposition to put away a heathen husband or wife, abstaining from marriage and from meats, Timothy's omission to take wine in sickness, show this, and make it remarkable that slavery was dealt with as it was by the Apostles. Only they who had the Spirit of God in them could have spoken so wisely, so temperately, with regard to an evil which met them everywhere with its bad influences and grievous sorrows. Some in their day, who professed to be Christian teachers, were "ultraists," and could not restrain themselves, but evidently encouraged servants not to count their masters worthy of all honor, and to use the equality of divine grace to them and their believing masters, as a claim to equality in other things, thus despising their believing masters because they were brethren. Never is the Apostle Paul more severe in the use of epithets than in denouncing such teachers and their doctrines. Far as possible from countenancing servitude as a condition which man has a right to perpetuate, or to which any class of men is doomed, but declaring plainly that freedom is to be preferred by the slave, he and his fellow-laborers employed themselves in disseminating those principles and that spirit

which would make slavery as an oppression impossible, changing its whole nature by abolishing all the motives which create such an institution. But as it is not sunrise in every place at the same moment, and in places where the sun has risen there are ravines and vales, where the light is slow to enter, so we can not expect that the evils of slavery will disappear at once, even where the religion of Christ generally prevails; but in proportion as it extends its influence, slavery is sure to cease in all its objectionable features. An interesting illustration of this, on a large scale, is afforded by the state of slavery in the United States and Cuba. Spanish slavery has a very mild code, but is severe and oppressive. American slavery has perhaps as rigid a code as any; but practically, it is the mildest form of involuntary servitude, and few would justify themselves in doing no better for their slaves than the law requires. Pure religion must have the credit of this difference, teaching us that to remove slavery we must promote spiritual religion, and to this end use every means to propagate Christian knowledge and Christian charity.

We are not as wise as Paul if we withdraw our Christian teachers and books, imbued with the great principles of pure religion, from communities where we are not allowed to do all the good which we may desire, or to present a duty in such specific forms as our preferences dictate. Our principle ought not to be, to abandon men as soon as we are resisted, or can not say and do all that we would; but we should study ways to remain, trusting to the power of light and love to open doors for us. The dust which we too readily shake off from our feet against men will be a witness against us, rather than against them. It must gratify the arch enemy to see us withdraw our forces in solemn indignation at his show of resistance. The children of this world do not suffer themselves to be so easily foiled, nor do they force unacceptable offerings upon Japan, but ply her with things to tempt her desire for further commodities, representing their usefulness in ways which do not excite national jealousy and pride.

It is refreshing to escape from those books of overheated zeal which attack slavery, and read the passages in the New Testament relating to the subject; breathing a spirit fatal to oppression, yet counseling no measures against it because of its seeming trust in its own omnipotent influence wherever it shall build its throne.

Paul's refusal to interfere between Onesimus and his master is one of those gentle lessons of wisdom on this subject which are so characteristic of his spirit in dealing with this public evil. That small epistle to Philemon, that one chapter, that little piece of parchment, that mere note of apology — that this should have fallen into the sacred canon, and not the epistle to Laodicea, is curious and interesting to those who regard the providence of God in the canon of Scripture. That little writing is like a small, firm beach, where storms have beaten, but have left it pure and white. It is the least of all seeds in Paul's Epistles. It is a curiosity of inspiration, a solitary idiom in a language, a Stonehenge in a country, a warm stream in the sea; it begins with loving salutations, ends with affectionate Christian messages, and sends back a servant to his master and to a system of slavery under which this fugitive could, if his master required, be put to death. Now, he who argues from this that he has an unqualified right to reclaim his slave, and subject him to just such treatment as he pleases, is as much at fault as those who are at the other extreme. It was to a Philemon that Onesimus was returned; it was to Abraham's house that Hagar was remanded. While the abstract principle of ownership is defended by these examples, he who uses them to the injury of a fellow-being will find that God has stores of vengeance for him, and that his own "Master in heaven" is the inexorable Judge.

The difference in the Apostles' way of dealing with slavery, and with other evils, teaches clearly that the relation itself is not in their view sinful. Many insist that it is sinful, that the Apostles must so have regarded it, and that the reason why they did not attack it is, they would not interfere with the laws and government. It is said, "they girdled slavery, and left it to die."

But this surely is not in accordance with the apostolic spirit. There is no public wickedness which they merely girdled and left to die. Paul did not quietly pass his axe round the public sins of his day. His divine Master did not so deal with adultery and divorces. James did not girdle wars and fightings, governmental measures. Let Jude be questioned on this point, with that thunderbolt of an Epistle in his hand. Even the beloved disciple disdained this gentle method of dealing with public sins when he prophesied against all the governments of the earth at once.

But slavery, declared by some to be the greatest sin against God's image in man, most fruitful, it is said, of evils, is not assaulted, but the sins and abuses under it are reprov'd, the duties pertaining to the relation of master and slave are prescribed, a slave is sent back to servitude with an inspired epistle in his hand, and slavery itself is nowhere assailed. On the contrary, masters are instructed and exhorted with regard to their duties as slaveholders. Suppose the instructions which are addressed to slaveholders to be addressed to those sinners with whom slaveholders are promiscuously classed by many, for example: "Thieves, render to those from whom you may continue to steal, that which is just and equal." "And,

ye murderers, do the same things unto your victims, forbearing threatenings." "Let as many as are cheated count their extortioners worthy of all honor." If to be a slave owner is in itself parallel with stealing and other crimes, miserable subterfuge to say that Paul did not denounce it because it was connected with the institutions of society; that he "girdled it, and left it to die." Happy they whose principles with regard to slavery enable them to have a higher opinion of Paul than thus to make him a timeserver and a slave to expediency.

But was he therefore "a proslavery man"? Not he. Would he have spoken against American slavery had he lived in our day? Surely he would; against its evils, its abuses, its sins, but not against the relation of master and slave. Suppose that Philemon had thrown Onesimus into prison for absconding, and Paul had heard of his having lain there three months till he was sick with jail fever, and likely to die. If he could have reached Philemon through church discipline, and the offender had persisted in his sin, we can imagine Paul directing the church "in the name of the Lord Jesus to deliver such an one to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of our Lord Jesus." Any church that suffers a member to deal wrongfully with his servant, or suffers a slave member to be recklessly sold, has in Paul's epistles single words and whole sentences which ought to make it quail. Yet there is not a word there against the relation of master and slave; and for what reason?

The way in which the Apostles evidently purposed to remove slavery, was by creating a state of things in which it would cease. This method is not analogous to girdling trees, but to another process resorted to by husbandmen. Their only method of expelling certain weeds — sorrel, for example — is, to enrich the soil. The gospel is to slavery what the growing of clover is to sorrel. Religion in masters destroys every thing in slavery which makes it obnoxious; and not only so, it converts the relation of the slave into an effectual means of happiness. In many instances at the South, for example, slavery is no more slavery so long as those masters live; and if religion were every where predominant, their servants would not suffer by the death of their masters any more than by time and chance, which happen to all. Religion will never remove men's need of being served and of serving; but it will make service an honorable and happy employment, under whatever name it may pass. And as farmers do not attack weeds for the mere sake of expelling them, but to use their place for something better, so the New Testament does not attack slavery to drive it out, but gets possession of the heart, which is naturally tyrannical and covetous, and, filling it with the fruits of the Spirit, the works of the flesh disappear.

When a man repents and is converted, he does not repent of his sins one by one, but there is a state of heart created within him, with regard to all sin, which constitutes repentance. In accordance with this we do not find the Bible laboring merely to make a man specifically penitent, but it uses one sin and another to lead the man back to that heart which is the root of all his sins. Those who preach to convicts tell us that when they are convinced of sin, if they fix their thoughts upon particular transgressions, and make them the special subjects of repentance, one of two things happens; they either see the whole of their sin and misery by means of these instances of wickedness, or they confine their thoughts to these items, and then become superficial and self-righteous. David's sin, as we see by the fifty-first Psalm, led him to feel and deplore his ruined nature. Many attempts to reform particular evils in society which grow out of human wickedness have no effect to make men true penitents, though reformations of morals and of abuses are always auxiliary to religion; but if an equal amount of zeal employed in assailing abuses were employed in promoting Christian piety and charity by diffusing Christian knowledge and ordinances, and also by the influence of a good temper and spirit, especially where Christian men are the objects of our zeal, and their cooperation and influence are our surest means of success, we should see changes in society brought about in a healthful way, which would be permanent because of the basis of character on which they would rest. And all this antifebrile sentiment is scorned by overheated zealots. Still there is sound discretion in these words of Dr. Chalmers:

I have been a projector in my day, and, much as I have been employed with the economics of society, my conviction is more and more strengthened in the utter vanity of all expedients short of faith in the gospel of Jesus Christ; whose disciples are the salt of the earth, and through whose spirituality and religion, alone, we can look for the permanent civilization and comfort of the species, or even for earthly blessings; which come after, and not before, the kingdom of God and his righteousness.

The apostolic spirit with regard to slavery, surely, is not of the same tone with the spirit which encourages slaves every where to flee from their masters, and teaches them that his swiftest horse, his boat, his purse, are theirs, if they wish to escape. Philemon, traveling with Onesimus, was not annoyed by a vigilance committee of Paul's Christian friends with a habeas corpus to rescue the servant from his master; nor did these friends watch the arrival of ships to receive a fugitive consigned by "the saints and faithful brethren which were at Colosse" to the "friends of the slave" at Corinth. True, these disciples had not enjoyed the light which the Declaration of American Independence sheds on the subject of human rights.

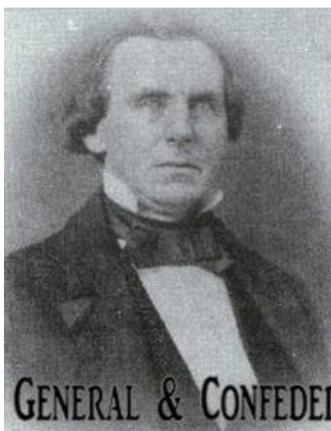
Moses, Paul, and Christ were their authorities on moral subjects; but our infidels tell us that we should have a far different New Testament could it be written for us now; but since we can not have a new Bible now and then, this proves that "God can not make a revelation to us in a book." Every man, they say, must decide as to his duty by the light of present circumstances, not by a book written eighteen hundred years ago. Zeal against American slavery has thus been one of the chief modern foes to the Bible. Let him who would not become an infidel and atheist beware and not follow his sensibilities, as affected by cases of distress, in preference to the word of God, which the unhappy fate of some who have made shipwreck of their faith in their zeal against slavery shows to be the best guide.

I may be allowed to state the manner in which my own mind was relieved at the South with regard to the prospects of slavery. From youth, I had believed that its removal is essential to our continued existence as a nation, and yet no one saw in what way this change was to be effected. My error was in supposing that the blacks must be removed in order to remove slavery, or, that they must be emancipated; that we must have some "first of August" to mark a general manumission. Now there are many slaveholders at the South who make the condition of their slaves as comfortable and happy as the condition of the same persons could be in any circumstances. Wicked men are permitted by the present laws to practise iniquity and oppression; but when the influence of good men so far prevails as to make laws which will restrain and govern those who are susceptible to no influence but that of authority, the form of slavery will be all pertaining to it which will remain, and this only while it is for the highest good of all concerned, and acknowledged to be so by both parties, the doom of the blacks, as a race, being abandoned, and the interests of each individual, his inclination and aptitude, being regarded in finding employment for him. I saw that if good men at the South were left to themselves without annoyance by foreign intervention, the spirit of the New Testament with regard to slavery might ere long be fulfilled. Nor would the Old Testament jubilee, or seventh year release, be necessary; these, like other things in Moses, being done away in Christ by the bestowal of liberty, or protection under Christian masters; no ceremonial, therefore, being needed to effect or announce their liberty, and jubilees and seventh years, indeed, not coming fast enough, and being too formal for the times. Let us feel and act fraternally with regard to the South, defend them against interference, abstain from every thing assuming and dictatorial, leave them to manage their institution in view of their accountability to God, and, if we please, in view of the line upon line and precept upon precept which we, their many and very capable instructors, male and female, have vouchsafed to them, and we may expect that American slavery will cease to be any thing but a means of good to the African race. When no longer available for good, the form itself will be abolished.

Suppose that we should receive a report from missionaries giving an account of three millions of people brought out of heathenism and elevated to the position of the slaves in our Southern States. While we should join with the missionaries to deplore remaining evils and certain liabilities to evil among them, we should fill our prayers with praises at the marvelous work of grace among that people. And were the foreign lords of that people generally in favor of their improvement, and very many of them examples of all kindness and faithfulness, we should be careful how we interfered with the leaven which was leavening, slowly, but surely, the whole mass of the population. Some, however, as now, would wish to precipitate the process.

In addition to what has been said of the way in which the gospel will affect slavery, it may be observed that common humanity, self-interest, and law may, each in its own method, do all the good in its power, without waiting for the higher motives of spiritual religion. Nor are we to neglect or disparage means and measures which tend to good, though actuated merely by considerations of policy. Yet spiritual religion is God's chosen instrument of doing the greatest amount of good in the best possible way. It puts every thing at work for its object; it purifies our motives; it makes the result permanent; it saves men from the temptations incident to victory and defeat.

This article was extracted from Nehemiah Adams, A Southside View of Slavery (Boston: T.R. Marvin and B.B. Mussey and Company, 1854).



'I have never doubted what Virginia would do.... We, of South Carolina, hope soon to greet you in a Southern Confederacy, where white men shall rule our destinies, and from which we may transmit to our posterity the rights, privileges and honor left us by our ancestors.'

-Letter from McQueen to Richmond civic leaders in January of 1861

GENERAL & CONFEDERATE CONGRESSMAN JOHN McQUEEN

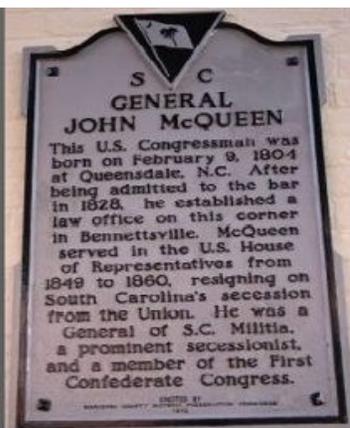




Photo Collection of Ed Jackson

# JULY 1<sup>st</sup>, 1956 GA STATE FLAG

What is now commonly referred to as the "56 Flag" was created by a suggestion from Atlanta attorney John Sammons Bell, then-chairman of the State Democratic Party, attorney for the Association of County Commissioners of Georgia (ACCG), and later Judge on Georgia Court of Appeals. His desire was to "forever perpetuate the memory of the Confederate soldier who fought and died for his state.", because as a young boy, he attended reunions of the old Confederate Veterans with his Grandfather, and learned the Battleflag was a soldiers flag. On July 1st, 1956, Georgia Senate Bill 98 took effect. SB98 was signed into law on February 13th, 1956 by then-Governor Marvin Griffin, and it called for a new design to the Georgia State Flag.

Waynesboro State Senator and former Confederate Colonel Herman H. Perry designed the flag it replaced in 1879, based on the 1st Flag of the Confederacy, AKA Stars and Bars. Similar to our current flag, it had 2 red stripes and 1 white stripe, and a field of blue down the left side, which was a Government flag.

By 1955 however, people like Representative Denmark Groover argued at the time that the old flag never had enough meaning for him when he was a boy and that the new flag "would replace those meaningless stripes with something that has deep meaning in the hearts of all true Southerners"

Others like Senator Jefferson Davis of Cartersville also argued that the state should be entitled to adopt the new flag, because

"Georgia suffered more than any other state in the Civil War and endured a scorched earth policy from the mountains of Tennessee to the sea."

SB98 was discussed and passed with little fanfare, and became law on July 1st, 1956.

## **At the time, the only group that opposed the change was the UDC.**

It is a fact that under the 1879 Perry version flag, Jim Crow, lynching, segregation, and blatant discrimination were widely practiced and flourished in Georgia, as well as across America, but it is also fact that Georgia's greatest gains in Civil Rights came under the "56 Flag".

Under the 1956 Bell version flag, Georgia's schools were fully integrated, Black citizens were no longer lynched, they began enjoying full civil and equal rights in business, political, and social settings. Georgia gained 3 professional sports teams - Falcons, Braves, and Flames - hosted 2 Super bowls, held the 1996 Olympics, and set the pace for the New South.

In 1958, the United States Congress passed laws granting the same rights and recognition enjoyed by Union Veterans to men who served in the Confederate States Army and Navy. To this day Confederate Veterans are United States Veterans.

Public Law 85-425 adopted May 23, 1958 as H.R. 358

### **AN ACT**

To increase the monthly rates of pension payable to widows and former widows of deceased veterans of the Spanish-American War, Civil War, Indian War, and Mexican War, and provide pensions to widows of veterans who served in the military or naval forces of the Confederate States of America during the Civil War...

### **CONFEDERATE FORCES VETERANS**

Sec. 410. The Administrator shall pay to each person who served in the military or naval forces of the Confederate States of America during the Civil War a monthly pension in the same amounts and subject to the same conditions as would have been applicable to such... if such forces had been service in the military or naval service of the United States.

Sec. 2. This act shall be effective from the first day of the second calendar month following its enactment.

Unfortunately, the 1956 Bell version flag had its enemies. Attempts at claiming the "56 flag" was changed to fight integration years after the Brown vs. Board Topeka Kansas decision helped begin the BIG LIE that remains to this day. Although the historical facts are out there that plainly refutes this, truth means little for those with anti Confederate agendas.

Concerning those who claim that the flag was "... designed as a last desperate grasp of defiance against integration." Judge John Sammons Bell said,

"Absolutely nothing could be further from the truth ... every bit of it is untrue." He further stated, "Anybody who says anything to the contrary is wrong or perpetuating a willful lie."

Also during 1956, several newspaper accounts of the proposed change in the GEORGIA FLAG were published. In none of the articles was there any hint that the flag change was for any reason other than that stated by the gentlemen who proposed the change.

Former Governor Ernest Vandiver said

"I can assure you that there was no discussion of segregation or of the U.S. Supreme Court. All that was discussed was the coming centennial of the Civil War and this flag was meant to be a memorial to the bravery, fortitude and courage of the men

who fought and died on the battlefield for the Confederacy. More Americans died in that war than any other war in the history of America, before or since."

In April 1992, the Atlanta Journal Constitution conducted a poll of 43,000 people, and their results were that 75% of citizens wished the "56 Flag" remain as is.

In a May 29th, 1992 article from the New York Times relating to former Georgia Governor Zell Miller's failed attempt to change the flag, House Speaker Thomas Murphy from rural Haralson County said he had always promised "my folks" that he would not vote to change the flag. "I personally don't see anything wrong with the flag we have," Mr. Murphy said.

On July 5th, 1992, the Atlanta Journal Constitution released the results of their own investigation into the flag change of 1956: "There is little written record of the 1956 Legislature and no audio record. News stories about the change were few. In none of our research did we find any record of a stated connection between changing the flag and opposition to desegregation rulings."

On March 9, 1993, Denmark Groover took to the floor of the Georgia House to challenge then Gov. Miller's proposal to change the 1956 flag. He admitted the obvious that segregation was a heated topic in 1956 and added, "But those who now say that the legislature was obsessed with the matter of segregation to the exclusion of all other matters know not of what they speak..."

[Groover's March 9, 1993 remarks to the GA House are attached as Exhibit A to his 1994 deposition for the James Andrew Coleman lawsuit ]

Denmark Groover listed numerous appropriations made to fund historical markers and the Stone Mountain memorial in preparation for the tourism expected to accompany the 1961 Centennial Observances for the War Between the States:

- 1952 -- HR 250-9286 (pp 1250,1331,1689,1815,1828) To Propose and urge the creation of a Confederate Memorial Park at Stone Mountain. Adopted 11Feb.1952
- 1953 -- HB 160 (pp 12,131,134,171,374,381) To provide pensions for widows of Confederate Veterans Adopted 4 FEB. 1953
- 1953 -- SR 65 (pp 1251,1260,1481,1491,1689) The Confederate Veterans' Home property was given to the Georgia military department Adopted 1Dec.1953
- 1955 -- HR 35 (pp114,134,759) A resolution urging the Governor to purchase Stone Mountain because, "the incomplete and unsightly condition of the Stone Mountain Memorial has long weighed upon the pride and civic conscience of all Georgians." and the acquisition of Stone Mountain by the State would insure, "a lasting Memorial." Adopted 18Jan.1955
- 1955 -- HR 48 (pp155,200) Recommended the placing of a bust of General "Stonewall" Jackson in the Hall of Fame in New York City. Project was begun by the UDC and had the, "whole hearted endorsement," by the State. Adopted 20Jan.1955
- 1955 -- HR 145 (pp513,680,690,759) A resolution designating December 9th of each year as "Uncle Remus Day" Adopted 15Feb.1955
- 1955 -- HR 195 (p800) A resolution honoring 'Miss Anne Collins as, "Miss Deep South of 1954" Adopted 16Feb. 1955
- 1955 -- HB 14 (pp32,37,51,81,82) A bill to establish the Georgia State War Veterans' Home Adopted 7June1955
- 1955 -- HR 22 (p90) "A resolution naming the new bridge across the Wilmington river "Memorial Bridge" in honor of deceased veterans." Adopted 17June1955
- 1956 -- SR 30 (pp 449,468,1135,1140,1378) a resolution creating the "All-south Centennial Committee of Georgia" Adopted 17Feb.1956
- 1956 -- SR 48 (pp1068,1174) A resolution to preserve the Confederate Flags at the Capitol. Adopted 15Feb1956
- 1956 -- HB 188 (pp 236,306,309,431) A bill to abolish the State Division of Confederate Pensions and Records. It was amended to put all records with reference to, "the glorious men of the Confederacy," under control of the Department of Archival History. Adopted 26Jan.1956

- 1956 -- HB 241 (pp 297,581,587) A bill to dispose of the Confederate Soldiers' Home and to provide for the care of widows now living there. Adopted 2Feb.1956
- 1956 -- SB 98 (pp 598,602,710,719,856) This is the bill that created the wonderful 1956 State Flag. Adopted9Feb.1956
- 1957 -- HR 217 (p1027) A resolution to commend the Confederate Veterans' Sons (SCV) for their efforts to preserve our glorious heritage. Adopted 20Feb.1957
- 1957 -- HB 610 (pp 876,1036) A bill to increase the amount of pension given to widows of Confederate Veterans Adopted 19Feb.1957
- 1957 -- HR 234 (pp1100,1179) A resolution to commend the formation of the Stone Mountain Confederate Memorial Association and encourage them (it) to finish the monument. Adopted 22Feb.1957

Numerous State funded Historical Markers were placed around Georgia in the following years:

1953-40, 1954-249, 1955-380, 1956-125, 1957-341, 1958-285, 1959-238, 1960-42, 1961-14, 1962-33, 1963-22, 1964-18, 1965-7 .

That's a total of 1,794 markers placed between 1953 and 1965. Of those, 1,373 were placed between 1953 and 1959. You might reasonably conclude that history and memorials were "on our minds" during those years.

The upcoming centennial of the war was on the minds of many Americans. In 1957, the U.S. Congress issued a joint resolution creating the Civil War Centennial Commission to "coordinate the nationwide observances." Georgia officials expected a lot of war-related tourism during the observances, so the vast majority of the above historical markers are related to the War for Southern Independence. These markers, the Stone Mountain memorial and the 1956 flag were all efforts to memorialize Georgia's veterans, Georgia's people and to present southern pride to all visitors.

Denmark Groover went on to say:

"To now conclude that the flag was adopted primarily as a symbol of segregation is justified only in the minds of those who, for their own purposes, would teach one segment of our population to hate another because of the faults of their ancestors. "

In 1993, James Andrew Coleman filed a Federal Lawsuit against then Governor Zell Miller over the 56 Flag. Mr Coleman lost the suit and the flag remained, but once again Denmark Groover stood up to the plate, and in his deposition under oath he stated " I have no personal knowledge which would dispute the purely historical motives which were expressed then and since by the sponsors and others involved with the legislation when it was introduced in the Senate. While I cannot say that the Supreme Court's rulings regarding desegregation played absolutely no role in my decision to support the bill in the House, I can say that segregationist sentiment was not the overriding or even a significant factor in my vote concerning the new flag, or, based on personal observation and knowledge, in its ultimate adoption by the House...."

On January 3rd, 1996, U.S. District Judge Orinda D. Evans dismissed the lawsuit against the Flag of Georgia by James Andrew Coleman by stating:

``There simply is no evidence in the record indicating that the flag itself results in discrimination against African-Americans''

Georgia Assistant Attorney General Ray Lerer said at the time:

"The flag in and of itself does not discriminate and does not create a disparate impact" .

On Thursday, September 26th, 1996, during the annual Carter Town Hall Meeting at Emory University, Former Georgia Governor, Former United States President and Nobel Prize winner Jimmy Carter stated;

" We should take the attitude that this (1956) flag is not racist in nature, and the fact that the flag does play a major role in Southern history is a legitimate historic recognition"

But the lies grew and multiplied. Another bit of untruth was that somehow the flag was "Bad for Business", and although the previously mentioned sports franchises and events came here under the "56 Flag", businesses like Home Depot were created here, Coca-Cola thrived and truly went global. Hartsfield Airport became the biggest in the world and 3 Interstates were built. Foreign companies built numerous plants here, and the economy was booming. The "56 Flag" was seen in movies like Smokey and the Bandit, and on TV shows like Matlock. Regardless, truth was ignored and facts tossed out the window.

It all finally came to a head in January 2001, when then Governor Roy Barnes Blitzkrieged the legislature with threats, lies, and intimidation. Having ran on a campaign not to touch the flag, and just finished an interview on CNN in October 2000, stating the flag was not an issue, his flag change happened so fast not even most legislators knew what was happening. Those who voted with him received extra money for their campaigns and districts, those who refused were stripped of funding, or even in the case of Bowdon's Jack West, had his district removed thru redistricting for voting against the change.

Barnes told the media that Georgians will forget in 3 months, but Georgians are not as stupid as politicians think they are and voted him and his Democratic party out of power for the first time in 132 years. Roy Barnes was also dropped as a Vice Presidential Candidate option from the 2004 National Democratic Ticket and replaced with John Edwards on the Kerry ticket.

Under the Barnes Rag, Georgia school children were dropped from 49th to 50th in national education rankings, and the state economy tanked. Barnes even lied about securing the infamous Mercedes Benz plant for having changed the flag.

Roy Barnes lost re-election due to his ugly blue rag courtesy of the Georgia Flaggers, but a vote was held between the Barnes Rag and Perdue Flag on March 2nd, 2004, with the 56 Flag dropped as an option for Black Caucus support of the Republican tobacco tax, and Barnes' rag garnered just 212,200 votes [http://sos.georgia.gov/elections/election\\_results/2004\\_0302/0000230.htm](http://sos.georgia.gov/elections/election_results/2004_0302/0000230.htm) out of an electorate of 3,893,209 eligible voters.

<http://sos.georgia.gov/elections/Charts/Frames/totalvoters.html>

Barnes would again lose reelection in 2010, Georgians being tired of King Rat.

A 2003 media report from 'Newsday' stated "Former Gov. Roy Barnes blamed his November '02 election defeat largely on the votes of those who rabidly opposed his introduction of a state banner that vastly reduced the emblem that had been prominently displayed on the flag since 1956"

In 2010 his wife Marie confirmed the same thing:

<http://projects.aichomefinder.com/gallery/view/homes/private-quarters/celebrity-splurge/georgia-governor-roy-barnes/15.html> "Displayed beneath Roy's portrait (inside their new home) is the Profile in Courage Award he received from the John F. Kennedy Library Foundation. He got it for changing the flag ... and it cost him his job."

The well-respected Mason Dixon Polling Firm conducted a Georgia flag poll in 2004. It showed that 79% of Georgians say the Flag issue is not settled.

Georgia based troops have taken the "56 Flag" with them onto the foreign battlefields of Viet Nam, Bosnia, Kuwait, Afghanistan and Iraq - and just as their Confederate ancestors before them - fought and died for their homes, families, and flag. Millions of Georgia citizens aged 11 to 56 were born, married and died under that flag.

**Since January 2001, the '56 Flag has prospered more than any other state flag in American history. It is on hundreds of thousands of flagpoles statewide. It is on shirts, bumpers, hats, stickers and car tags. It is very near and dear to a millions of Georgians, and is of course Heritage, not hate.**

Composed by Billy Bearden from reports by Steve Scroggins, Greg Pearson, Jim Dean, HPA, and John C Hall.



'After the great War Between the States, our people faced a desolate land of burned universities, destroyed crops and homes, with manpower depleted and crippled, and even the mule, which was required to work the land, was so scarce that whole communities shared one animal to make the spring plowing. There were no government handouts, no Marshall Plan aid, no coddling to make sure that our people would not suffer; instead the South was set upon by the vulturous carpetbagger and federal troops, all loyal Southerners were denied the vote at the point of bayonet, so that the infamous, illegal 14th Amendment might be passed. There was no money, no food and no hope of either. But our grandfathers bent their knee only in church and bowed their head only to God.

Not for a single instant did they ever consider the easy way of federal dictatorship and amalgamation in return for fat bellies. They fought.'

**-Governor George Wallace (1963)**

The Mind and Method of a Great American Soldier



# ROBERT E. LEE AT WAR

By Scott Bowden

Volume Two: Hope Arises From Despair

THE NEXT EXCITING INSTALLMENT IN THE LANDMARK SERIES!

# ROBERT E. LEE AT WAR

## THE MIND AND METHOD OF A GREAT AMERICAN SOLDIER

BY AWARD-WINNING AUTHOR SCOTT BOWDEN

*"The presence of the enemy in front of the capital, the great interests involved, and the existence of all that is dear to us appeal in terms too strong to be unheard, and [General Lee] feels assured that every man has resolved to...Conquer or Die in the approaching contest." —Special Orders, No. 22, June 1, 1862*



Richmond, Virginia, late spring, 1862. A powerful enemy is at the gates of a young republic's capital. An inherited force, outnumbered and haphazardly-organized, representing a collection of fiercely independent individuals forming disparate congeries lacking almost everything, save courage, has to be willfully molded into

a real army, lest the capital falls and the war lost. A chief executive whose own history and personality has combined to resist employing in any meaningful way the man to which he must now turn—the same man Abraham Lincoln had first sought more than a year earlier to lead the principal army of the Federal government. So much at stake. So little time in which to prepare. So unimaginable the consequences of failure. So breathtaking the possibilities resulting from victory.

*Robert E. Lee at War: Hope Arises From Despair* is an indispensable volume for anyone interested in Lee's first summer as commander of the Army of Northern Virginia, and encompasses the period from June 1, 1862—the day Lee ascended to army command—through the end of the summer. Lee's Herculean efforts to save Richmond, change the course of the war in the East and create the conditions by which the Confederacy might attain its political imperative takes the reader through Lee's first three campaigns—The Seven Days, Second Manassas and Maryland. Utilizing fresh analytical insights and rigorous contextualization, the memorable story that emerges of Lee's generalship amid countless challenges and difficult odds, has never been fully told. New insights to Lee's military mind, his sought-after goals and his generalship in the broader perspective of warfare as a whole, set against his ongoing efforts to craft and reorganize an army in his image, are both unprecedented and illuminating. What were Lee's original plans in each campaign? How and when were these modified? What driving factors—those outside the army and within—influenced Lee's operational and battlefield plans? The answers to these questions, and many more, help evaluate Lee that ultimately renders a whole new story about the Civil War in the east.

*Robert E. Lee at War: Hope Arises From Despair* combines stunning imagery, graphics, maps, detailed orders of battle, and more, to assist the reader in following Lee from the gates of Richmond to Maryland's shore, and beyond.

[LeeAtWar.com](http://LeeAtWar.com) • [LegionOfHonorPublishing.com](http://LegionOfHonorPublishing.com)

Legion of Honor Publishing, LLC., 2000 McKinney Ave., Dallas, Texas, 75201



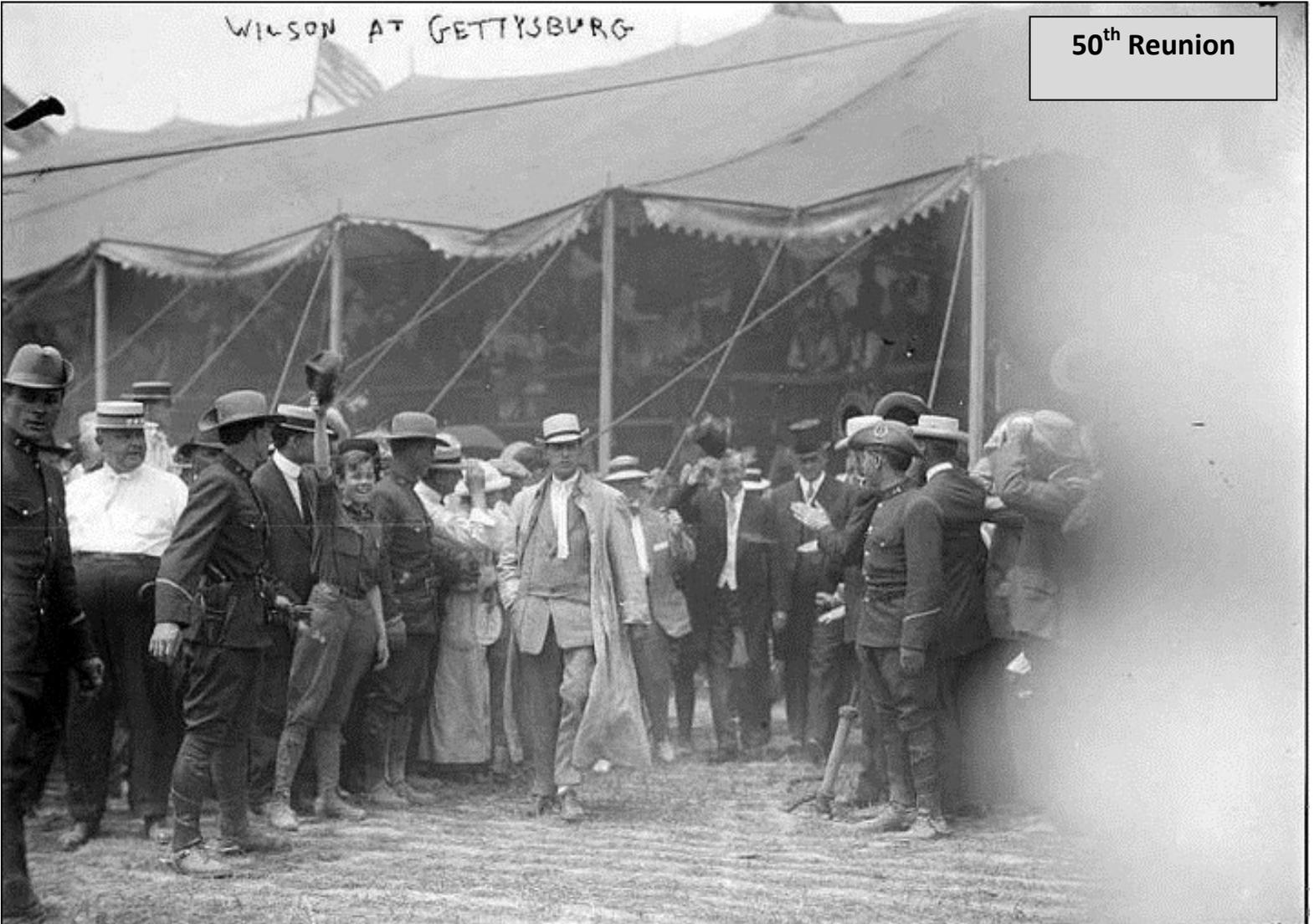
# GETTYSBURG

1863 – 2013

150<sup>th</sup> Anniversary

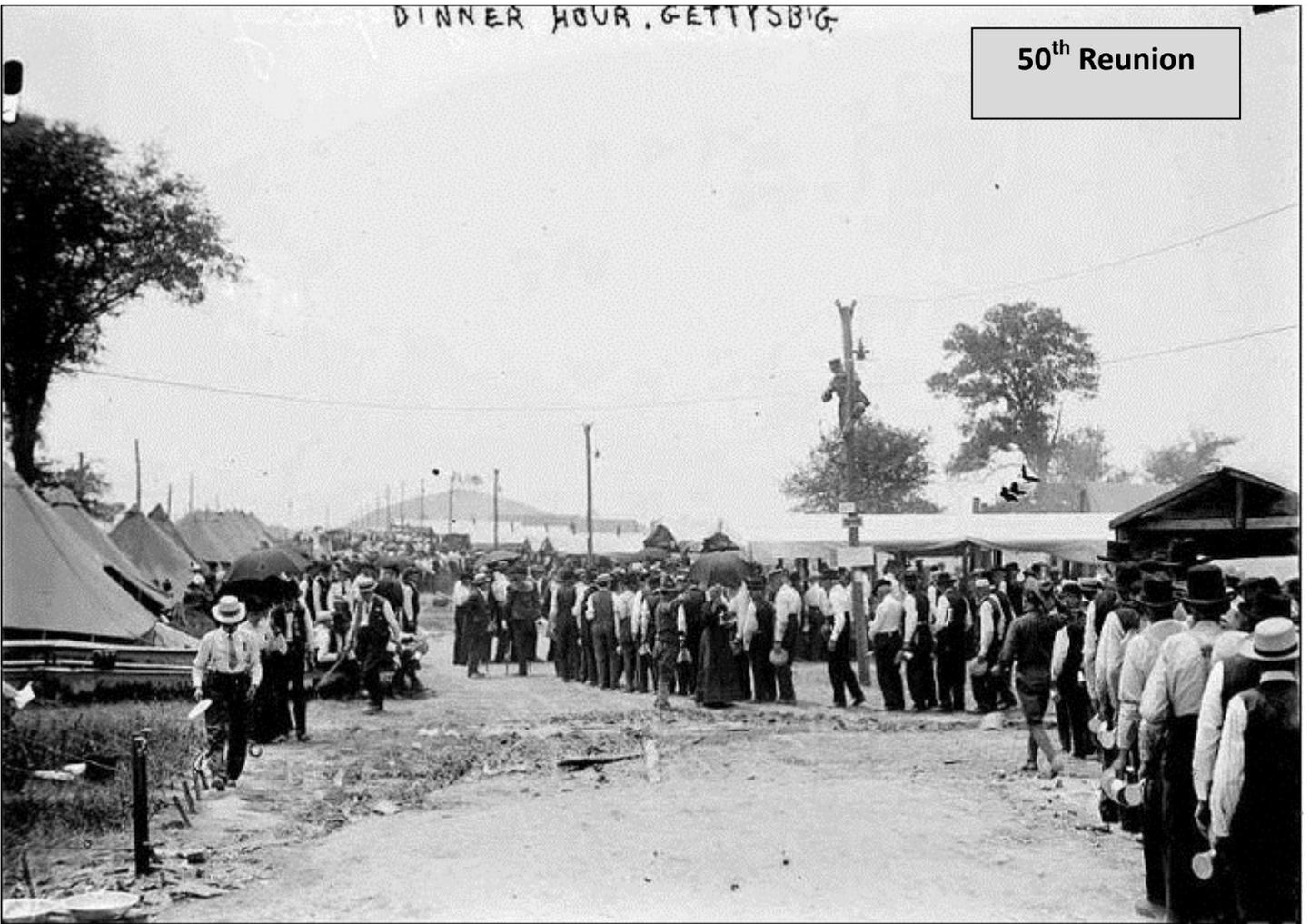
WILSON AT GETTYSBURG

50<sup>th</sup> Reunion



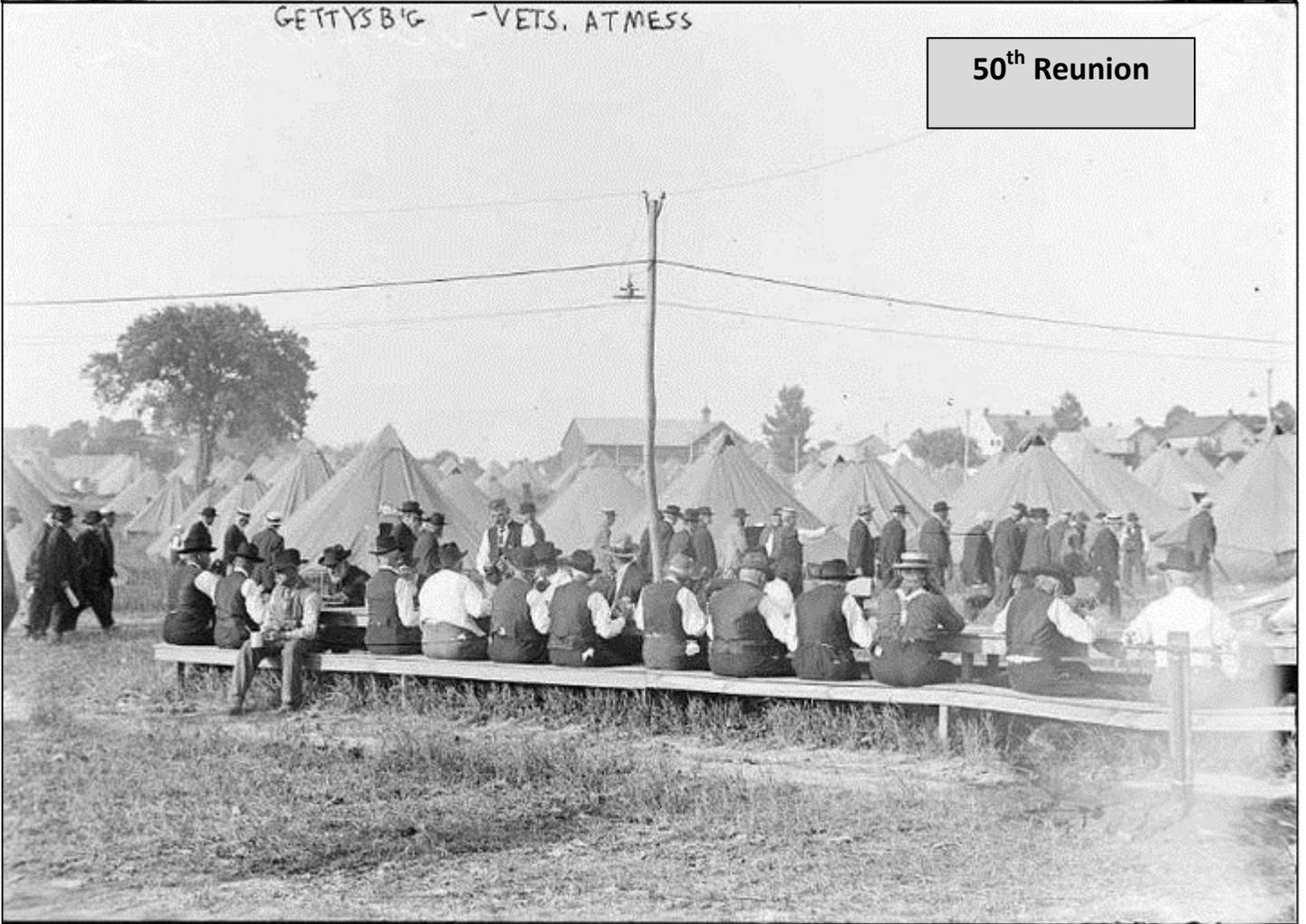
DINNER HOUR, GETTYSB'G

50<sup>th</sup> Reunion



GETTYSB'G - VETS. AT MESS

50<sup>th</sup> Reunion



# Young Marshall

Young Marshall of Sumter County, Georgia enlisted on 11 June 1861 as a Private in the "Americus Volunteer Rifles", later designated Co. K, 9th Georgia Infantry. The enlisting officer was James M.D. King; either Marshall looked older than his age on enlistment or King did not ask many questions of his 15-year old recruit. As a part of the Georgia brigade commanded by George T. "Tige" Anderson, the 9th Georgia participated in every major engagement of the Army of Northern Virginia from 1862-1865 and was also at Chickamauga. The youthful Marshall was to prove a resilient warrior: listed as present for duty except a furlough in August 1863, he recovered twice from combat wounds and was one of the few survivors of his regiment present to surrender at Appomattox.



Despite the loss of his older brother Joseph, killed at Sharpsburg on 17 September 1862 while serving with the 4th Georgia Infantry, Young Marshall remained unscathed until 2 July 1863, the second day of the Battle of Gettysburg. In the late afternoon, as part of Hood's division on the right flank of Lee's army, Anderson's brigade advanced in support of the first line on the left of the division. Driving forward more than a mile, the 9th Georgia on the extreme left of the brigade sustained 189 casualties as they pushed through Rose's Woods and the Wheatfield. After fighting more than three hours, they were finally halted upon reaching heavily defended Little Round Top. At some point during these actions, Private Young Marshall received a "ball [in] neck" and a fractured clavicle; he fell into Federal hands on 5 July but was later paroled and eventually returned to duty. Marshall was wounded again slightly in the head at Petersburg on 20 July 1864. This period Brady image, taken from the Wheatfield Road just after the Battle of Gettysburg, shows Little Round Top (center) and Big Round Top (right) from the northwest looking southeast. The limit of G. T. Anderson's advance occurred on the right of the image, at the base of Little Round Top.





# Gettysburg at Night

PICKETT'S CHARGE, BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG, GETTYSBURG, PA. 8

BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG

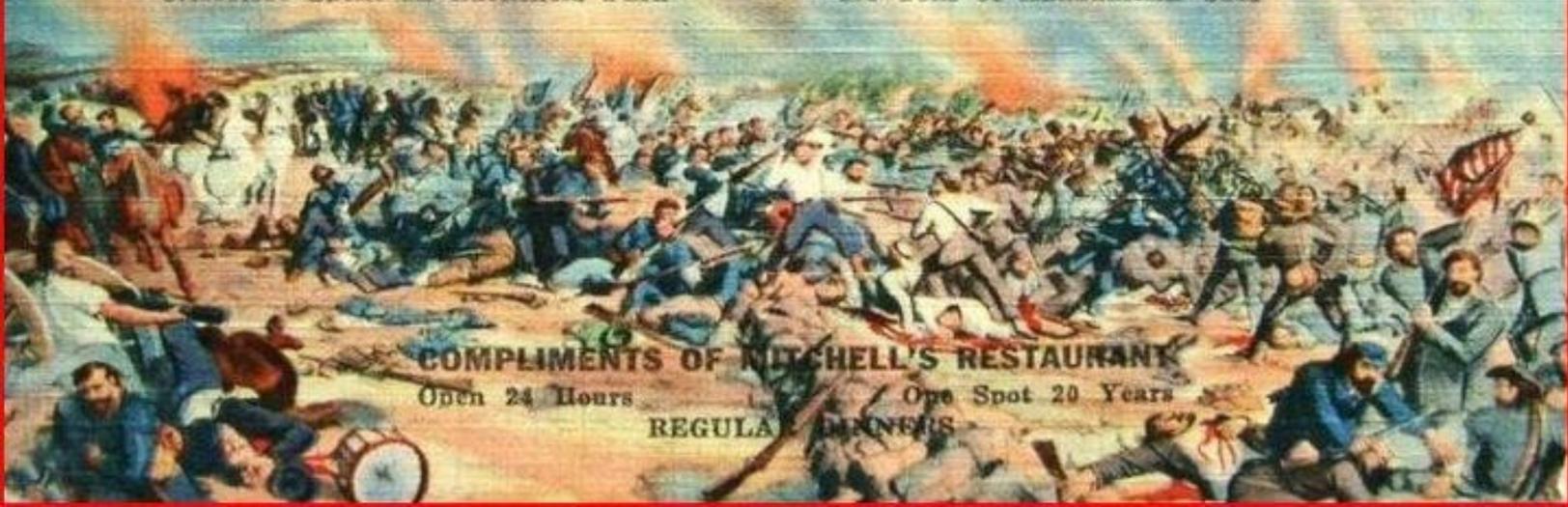
JULY 1-2-3--1863

## BATTLEFIELD DATA

38 Square Miles of Battlefield  
 24,460 Acres of Land  
 2,500 Acres in Road and Memorial Sites  
 57 Miles of Road  
 35 Macadam and Telford Roads  
 12,296 Monuments  
 385 Mounted Cannons  
 5 Steel Observation Towers  
 \$7,000,000 Spent on Battlefield Park

## BATTLE FACTS

90,000 Union Soldiers in Fight  
 85,000 Confederate Soldiers  
 28,000 Confederate Killed, Wounded and Missing  
 23,000 Union Killed and Missing  
 10,000 Killed Outright  
 3,654 Union Buried in National Cemetery  
 579 Tons of Ammunition Used



COMPLIMENTS OF MITCHELL'S RESTAURANT

Open 24 Hours

One Spot 20 Years

REGULAR BANNERS



1863



## General Lee's Headquarters at Gettysburg







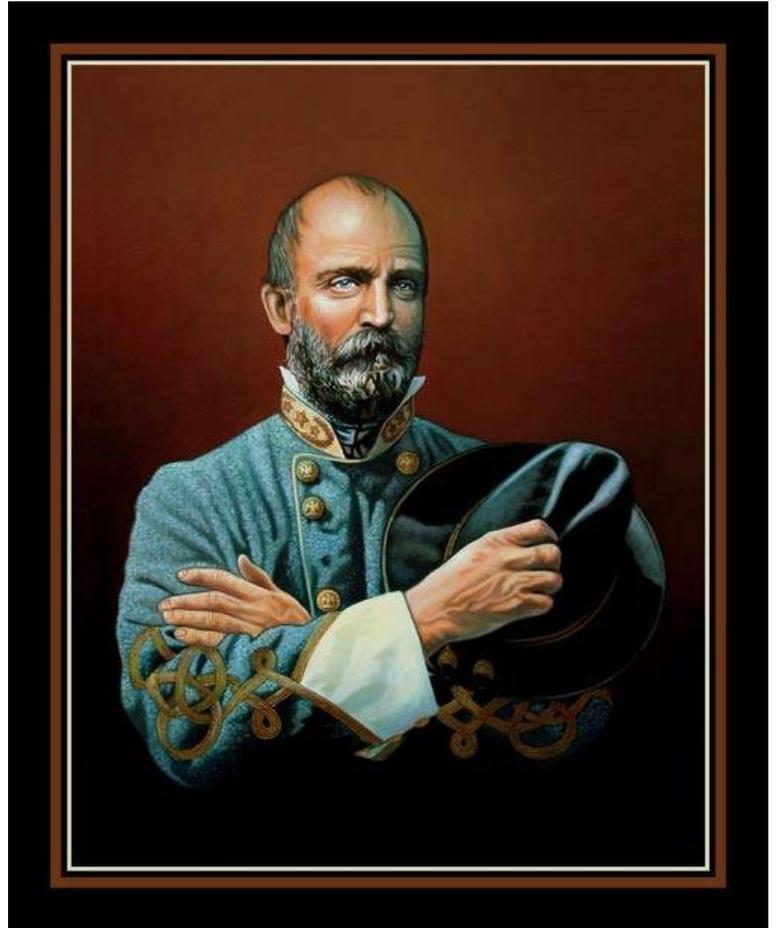
Armistead Monument

# ARMISTEAD AT THE BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG

Extracts from Letters Written by Dr. R. W. Martin to Rev. JAMES POINDEXTER.

When Armistead's Brigade was in line of battle a short time before the advance was ordered, the general marched up and down in front of his troops encouraging them in every way and said these words: "Men, remember what you are fighting for. Remember your homes, your firesides, your wives, mothers, sisters and your sweethearts." When the signal guns were fired Armistead instantly called attention, and instantly every man was on his feet. After a few words he walked to the front of the Fifty-third Virginia Regiment, his battalion of direction, and addressed the color bearer, "Sergeant, are you going to put those colors on the enemy's works over yonder?" "Yes, general, if mortal man can do it." He then exhorted the men to follow their colors and to remember the brave words of their color bearer. When the advance commenced Armistead placed himself in front of the colors of the Fifty-third Regiment, and from that point watched and directed the advance until within a short distance of the enemy's line. When approximating the advance line General Kemper rode up to him and said, "General, hurry up, my men can stand no more." He quietly turned to the officer commanding his battalion of direction and said, "Colonel, double quick."

The double quick soon quickened into a run, the run into a charge, Armistead all the time in front of his line of battle, and when the desperate effort came and the final rush for the rock fence was made he drew his sword, put his hat on the end of it, called upon his men to follow, rushed over the rock fence and was shot just as he reached the enemy's guns between the two lines in the bloody angle, thus sealing with his life's blood the high water mark of the rebellion. As Armistead was carried from the field he met Hancock as he was hurrying to the front. They recognized each other, and Hancock dismounted and grasped his hand and told him how sorry he was to see him wounded. Armistead returned his kindly expression and told him the wound was mortal and that he had on his person some things that he wish to entrust to him to be returned when opportunity presented to his people in Virginia. Hancock accepted the commission and tried to persuade Armistead to look upon the bright side, that he probably was not so seriously hurt as he feared, excused himself by saying he was compelled to hurry to the front, left Armistead, promising to see him the next day. In a short time he was wounded himself and they never met again. This was related to me as I lay on the ground back of the battle line where hundreds of wounded were carried after the fight, by one of Hancock's staff, who rode up just about dusk and found a number of men congregated about me. When he found I was a badly wounded "Johnny Reb" Colonel he dismounted, drove everybody away that I might have fresh air, and commenced a conversation. When he found that I was of Armistead's Brigade, he said, "Armistead, Armistead. I have just left him, he is mortally wounded," and then related the above, and said, "I will have you taken care of," etc. Armistead lingered through the 4th and died on the 5th, leaving an example of patriotism, heroism and devotion to duty which ought to be handed down through the ages. Here's my heart and hand. Sincerely and truly, R. W. Martin, Pittsylvania Tribune.



# BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG, PA

PICKETT'S CHARGE  
2:00 TO 2:45 P.M. - JULY 3, 1863

*Legend*

Confederate	Union

*Map prepared for Civil War Preservation Trust by Susan Stanley*



A.P. HILL

TRIMBLE

PICKETT

MCLAWS

LONGSTREET

PETTIGREW

HANCOCK  
2nd CORPS

HAYS

GIBBON

DOUBLEDAY  
NEWTON  
1st CORPS

CALDWELL



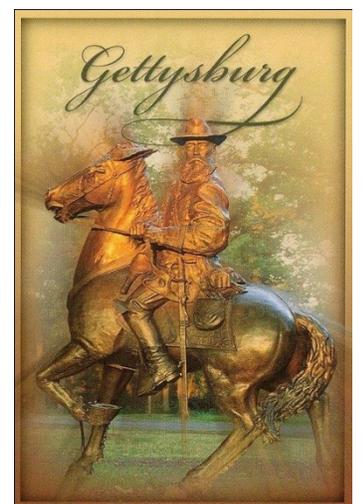






The High Water Mark  
of their youth.

The ghosts of Pickett's Charge, Umbrellas and Gray hair have replaced the grizzled veterans of 63. Note the **Black Confederate Soldier** on the far right.





## **The Army of Northern Virginia marches north.....**

**On the heels of decisive victories at Fredericksburg (1862) and Chancellorsville (1863), Lee sought to mount an offensive into Pennsylvania. He had several objectives. An offensive would upset Union plans for a summer campaign, relieve a Virginia countryside exhausted by war, and allow the Army of Northern Virginia to live off the land in Pennsylvania. While in the area, Confederates also might temporarily capture Harrisburg, the state capital, thereby embarrassing the administration of U.S. president Abraham Lincoln. Finally—and this was perhaps Lee's main objective—an invasion would draw the Army of the Potomac out of Virginia so the Confederates could defeat it on Northern soil. Even in his role as general, Lee was playing politics. He understood that a victory in Pennsylvania would encourage the Northern peace movement, damage Republican interests, increase the possibility of foreign recognition, and perhaps even lead to a negotiated peace and Confederate independence.**

**In preparation for the campaign—as well as in response to the death of the much-celebrated Thomas J. "Stonewall" Jackson in May—Lee reorganized his army, from two army corps into three. James Longstreet, known as "Old Pete," was stubborn and opinionated and now Lee's most trusted lieutenant. He would keep the First Corps. One-legged Richard S. Ewell, "Old Bald Head," would take Jackson's old Second Corps. And A. P. Hill, known for his headlong charges, sudden bouts with illness, and notorious fights with Longstreet and Jackson, would lead the Third Corps. On June 3, the army, numbering approximately 75,000 confident, veteran soldiers, slowly began to shift west from positions around Fredericksburg.**

[From the Richmond Times, April 12, 1896]

# THE FIRST DAY AT GETTYSBURG

Tribute to Brave General Harry Heth who opened the Great Battle. A description by an eye witness.

Interesting Observations of Jaquelin Marshall Meredith, Chaplain of Heth's Division--His Version of the "Cause of Failure."



To the Editor of the Times:

Sir,--I have read with regret the war of words in regard to "cause of failure" on the part of the Confederates at the battle of Gettysburg. In the various accounts of the battle, not one has come from an eye-witness of the first day's fight, of July 1, 1863. Not one of the accounts, that I have seen, have done simple justice to the brave and gallant division of General Harry Heth and its faithful commander, upon whom rested the responsibility of opening the battle. As chaplain of 47th Regiment of Virginia Infantry, Brockenbrough's Brigade, first A.P. Hill's Division, Jackson's Corps, and afterwards Heth's Division, of A.P. Hill's Corps, I witnessed the events leading to, and the opening of the fight on the morning of July 1st, and the final charge of the remnants of Heth's Division, under Pettigrew, who charged, under Pickett, on the 3d of

July, at Cemetery Heights. As no one has done so, I proceed to give a circumstantial account of the 30th of June and 1st of July, to do justice to a general and division I honor and love. About 2 o'clock P.M., on June 30, 1863, Heth's Division, Hill's Corps, leading the advance of the corps, reached Cashtown and went into bivouac around the village, on the eastern slope of a ridge, the continuance of the Blue Ridge, but here much lower than in Virginia. Dr. E.B. Spence, division surgeon, came to me about 4 o'clock, and requested me to ride forward with him into Gettysburg as he wished to procure some medical supplies. I mounted my horse, and started at once with him, proceeding forward on the pike eastwards, for five miles. I saw no troops moving, but was assured by the Doctor that some of our division was ahead. We reached Gettysburg about 5 o'clock P.M., and tied our horses at the first drug-store, where we had been but a few moments, when we saw a regiment of Confederates (I have since read that it was one of Pettigrew's North Carolina regiments), coming from the eastern part of town at the quick march. We two non-combatants at once mounted, and joining the colonel at the head of the column, moved steadily back to Cashtown. The colonel was a stranger to me, although I knew Colonel James Marshall and Colonel Burgwin, commanding two of General Pettigrew's regiments. I knew General Pettigrew well, having served under him at the battle of Seven Pines, but I did not see him that evening. The Doctor and I were told that a superior force of the enemy were moving on Gettysburg. We were not followed nor did any Federal cavalry attack, or even show itself in rear or flank during the one hour and a half, to two hours that this regiment took to proceed in orderly march back to Cashtown. So far as we could see at night-fall on the 30th of June, there was no Federal force between Gettysburg and Cashtown. Very early on the morning of July 1st, Heth's Division fell into line, and debouched into the pike, marching towards Gettysburg in the following order, Viz: Archer's Brigade of Tennesseans leading; next, Colonel John W. Brockenbrough's Brigade of Virginians; next, Davis' Mississippi Brigade: Fourth, Pettigrew's North Carolina Brigade. Archer's and Brockenbrough's Brigades each numbered 1,000 men, as many men were left on the road in the rapid march of A.P. Hill's Corps to overtake Longstreet, and pass him in Clarke county, Virginia, ours being the corps left to watch Hooker at Fredericksburg.

"WE MUST FIGHT THEM"

I was riding with my colonel, Robert M. Mayo, and with Colonel Brockenbrough, commanding brigade, and had reached a point one mile east of Cashtown, when a staff officer of General H. Heth's--I think it was captain Stockton Heth, the General's brother--rode up to our two colonels, and talked a few moments as we marched along the road. I heard him say: "General Heth is ordered to move on Gettysburg, and fight or not as he wishes." When he rode away I remember Colonel Brockenbrough and Colonel Mayo saying: "We must fight them; no division general will turn back with such orders." We had proceeded very slowly, giving time for the whole division to form in the road and march, and had, at 9 o'clock A.M., reached only about one and a half or two miles east from Cashtown, when we passed over a long ridge and down into a broad, clean, open valley, with the pike leading gradually by open fields upwards to another long ridge, where some oak woods covered a large part of the crest on both sides of the road. We had begun to ascend this slope, when I noticed Archer's Brigade file to the right of the road and march by columns of four, or marching orders, at right angles to the road. In a few moments Brockenbrough's Brigade filed out on the right about four to five hundred yards in rear of Archer's. While still marching; and without time to face into battle line, with guns unloaded, Archer's Brigade of 1,000 men were suddenly charged upon by Buford's Federal Cavalry, 2,500 strong, from the cover of the wood on the ridge. The attack was so sudden in front and both flanks that in a few moments I saw General Archer and two-thirds of his brigade captured with only a few pistol shots from the cavalry. One-third of the brigade fled back upon the line being formed by Brockenbrough's Virginians, and rallied behind them. Brockenbrough, also in marching order, ordered "left-face, load;" then, unable to fire because of the flying Tennesseans, he back-stepped the brigade until in line with Davis' Brigade, then forming battle line on the left or north side of the Cashtown pike. Buford's Cavalry withdrew with some six or seven hundred prisoners behind the wooded crest. General Heth now brought up Pettigrew's Brigade, and advanced the whole division to attack the rest. When we reached the crest the cavalry was gone, and seen a mile away withdrawing to the summit of another ridge. General Heth moved in line of battle slowly but steadily across the valley, charged and drove back this cavalry, now supported by infantry. This must have been only a brigade of the Federal infantry corps, for it fell back on the ridge just west of Gettysburg and overlooking the town. This was a high, commanding ridge, with many open farms and but little woods, and stretching northeast and southwest across the road from Cashtown, Carlisle, and overlooking the valley through which led the road from York. I remember how thankful I felt as Heth's Division moved forward about 1 o'clock P.M. to attack this ridge, which was crowned with long lines of waiting infantry and from which came a steady artillery fire, when, on looking to the left of our line, I saw a Confederate division (Rodes') come of the Carlisle road and form battle line to aid us, while looking back I saw Pender's Division coming up the pike in our rear. Heth's Division had suffered the loss of two-thirds of Archer's Brigade and some loss in sweeping back the Federal infantry from the last ridge, but now held the centre of attack on the right and left of the

Cashtown pike. Here for two hours the fight was hot and steady. The Federal corps held its ground stubbornly, ebbing and flowing. Here I saw the Virginians of Brockenbrough's Brigade--22d Virginia, Colonel E. Poinsett Tayloe; 40th Virginia, Col. J.W. Brockenbrough, commanding brigade; 47th Virginia, Colonel R.M. Mayo; and 55th Virginia Regiments--driving the enemy in hand to hand fighting out of houses and barns of which they made forts. Here General Heth was wounded; here fell brae Colonel Burgwin, of North Carolina, and here I buried the next day, on the highest point, under a lone tree, with the Church's solemn services, Captain Brockenbrough, brother and aid of our brigade commander. By 3 o'clock the Federals fled from the ridge, across the valley and through Gettysburg to the Cemetery Heights. Soon after, or about 3 o'clock, I rode to the left where a few pieces of artillery were still replying to the artillery on Cemetery Heights, and there met a long and large force of Federal prisoners marching back on the Cashtown road westward. The guard told me that General Early threw a skirmish line around these and captured them as they were flying in disorder before Rodes', Heth's and Pender's Division. There were about 5,000 prisoners.

I looked down and saw a level valley in which Gettysburg lay and could distinguish Early's Division forming line and resting across the road from York. This road was in rear of the position held by the Federal Corps during the battle. No doubt the appearance of Early's Division, coming up in their rear, completed their defeat. There was no more fighting after 3 o'clock. I was busy attending to the wounded and hardly noticed the forming of the long battle-line around Cemetery Heights.

#### HETH'S DIVISION SURPRISED.

The fighting next day was far to right and left, and I saw nothing of it, as the losses of our division and brigade were very heavy and I was constantly occupied with the wounded. General Heth was wounded while his division was pressing the centre of the attack. Heth's Division suffered a surprise, because we had no cavalry to meet Buford, but he redeemed this by a separate and special fight on the first ridge where the whole Federal corps had picked their position to command the roads from Cashtown and Carlisle. The position was a strong one, with free sweep for their artillery. Yet, in spite of its commander being disabled, this now decimated division was chosen to be placed under General Pickett, commanded by General Pettigrew, to take part in the fatal, but glorious charge on Cemetery Heights on the 3d of July. In that last charge fell my friend, Colonel James Marshall, of Markham, Fauquier county, VA., colonel of a North Carolina regiment, and commanding Pettigrew's Brigade. This, I think, shows that the bringing on of the battle of Gettysburg by surprise was, in the providence of God, due to the want of cavalry in front of Heth's Infantry. Who could blame General Heth for driving the cavalry before him when he had been surprised into loss. From there being no pursuit of the regiment, I left Gettysburg on the eve of the 30th of June.

General Heth could not know there was a force on the Cashtown road. Besides, had he prudentially withdrawn to Cashtown after suffering loss from the cavalry surprise, what would have been General Early's position? General Early and Rodes, of Ewell's Corps, had orders to move towards Cashtown. Gettysburg lay in Early's direct road, and if Heth had fallen back on Cashtown, and Rodes turned off four miles northwest on to the Cashtown road, then at 3 or 4 o'clock of July 1st Early would have found the Federal corps holding a strong position across his road with fully three times his numbers, and no help nearer than four or five miles. This would have brought on battle at a late hour in the evening when too late to defeat and drive the enemy from their position. All honor is due General Heth and his noble division for pressing the enemy and enabling Rodes and Pender and Early to secure a severely-fought battle. The cause of surprise was want of cavalry but the cause of battle was that the Federal corps commander had seized the ridge north and west of Gettysburg, which blocked the road by which the Confederate corps of Hill and Ewell were converging on Cashtown. Why need we look any further for causes. It sufficeth that the same All-wise Ruler of events that permitted Ashby and "Stonewall" Jackson to be shot in front and perhaps by their own men, and afterwards permitted J.E.B. Stuart to fall after victory by the seeming accidental shot of a Federal trooper, who was fleeing from our lines; the same Ruler permitted the otherwise invincible Army of Northern Virginia and its beloved general to suffer a repulse at Gettysburg.

Respectfully,

Jaquelin Marshall Meredith,  
Chaplin of 47th Virginia Infantry, Heth's Division,  
A.P. Hill's Corps, A.N. Va., C.S.  
Wide Water, Va., March 31, 1896.

# Eye witness to Pickett's Charge



A DIARY OF THE WAR ,WHAT I SAW OF IT.  
BY William S. White,  
Third Richmond Howitzers, First Virginia Artillery,  
Second Corps, A. N. V.

## Pickett's Charge!

*"Cease firing!"—our infantry is about to charge, and we anxiously gather in squads upon the brow of the hill to witness that charge that will be remembered so long as brave deeds are honored, so long as the English tongue is spoken. Boldly do the troops of Hill and Longstreet advance across the intervening space, and the infantry fight commences —nearer and nearer do they advance towards the enemy's works, and a fire such as man never stood is poured into their devoted ranks. Some waver and fall back — as mountain mist before the summer's sun, so melts our line away. Pell mell our brave boys are driven back—the enemy leaves his works and with banners flying, rapidly advances upon our troops ; our artillery opens to cover the retreat of our troops, but for some unaccountable reason is ordered to "cease firing "*

*" Quickly our infantry are rallied in the very face of that sheet of living flame, and with a yell turn upon the enemy who break and take cover under their works. Again and again this is repeated—sometimes our men would actually be in their works, but by almost superhuman efforts the enemy would regain them, and drive our men away. Those hills, more formidable than the heights of Fredericksburg, cannot be taken, and " Pickett's charge" has passed into history. Failure is written upon the banner of the Army of Northern Virginia, but the end is not yet.*

*Will the enemy attempt to take our position?—if so, he will find that the men who could make a charge can just as gallantly repel one. 'Tis useless to cause the farther effusion of blood by another attempt, and our troops gradually fall back to our former lines, not pursued by the enemy. How my bright anticipations of a brilliant victory have been dispelled by this disastrous charge!*

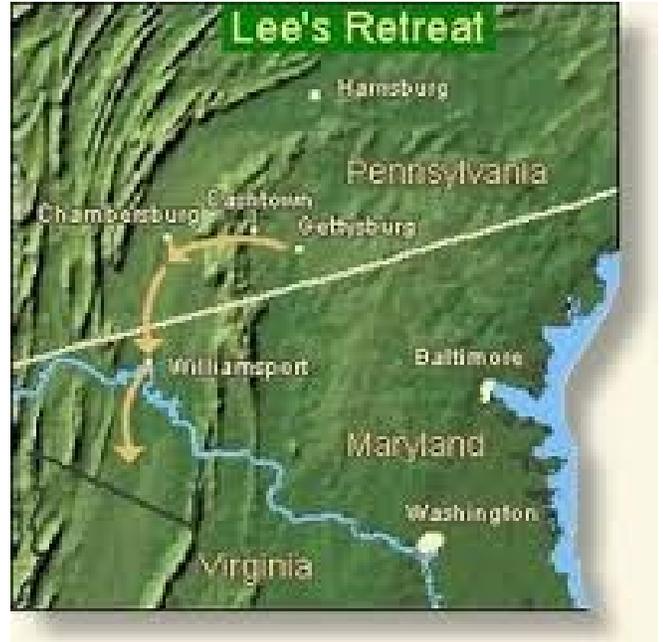
*Many, very many of our gallant soldiers have fallen, and many have been captured, but if Meade desires to find out the strength of our position, we will show him that the Army of Northern Virginia has in no manner lost confidence in Robert E. Lee, nor in itself. We do not anticipate an attack, for Meade is also terribly crippled, too much so to make an attack upon us without receiving further reinforcements. In this he has the advantage: he can wait, for reinforcements are coming to him daily ; we must fight or quit.*

# General John D. Imboden and the Confederate Retreat from Gettysburg

By Heather K. Peake

It was the evening of July 3, 1863, and General Robert E. Lee faced a serious problem. The Battle of Gettysburg was over; his massive assault on the Union center had failed; his troops were spent; it was time to depart the field. He needed to get his army back to the safety of Virginia, and the sooner the better, for if the Union army caught its breath and went on the attack, the whole cause could be lost. As the night wore on, a general plan of retreat began to form -- and therein arose the problem. Three days of hard fighting had left more than 3,500 of his men dead and a staggering 18,735 wounded. Those wounded could not simply be left to the enemy. But how to bring them along without slowing the retreat to a crawl? That was the question. [1]

Around 11 pm, Lee called for Brigadier General John D. Imboden to report to his headquarters. Imboden's command was a semi-independent cavalry unit that had spent the summer campaign attached to Robert E. Lee's left flank, carrying out raids and destroying railroad bridges and canals as the main body of the Army of Northern Virginia moved northward. They had not arrived on the field until noon on July 3, and Lee, busy with the final plans for Pickett's advance on the Union lines, had simply ordered them to guard the rear of the Confederate line. "[M]y little force took no part in the battle," Imboden later wrote, "but were mere spectators of the scene, which transcended in grandeur any that I beheld in any other battle of the war." His men and their mounts were fresh and comparatively well-rested, and that made Imboden a valuable commodity on that particular night. [2]



John Imboden was not highly regarded by Lee or other high-ranking officers in the Confederate Army. The 40-year-old lawyer and politician from Staunton, Virginia had first won attention in April 1861, just as Virginia seceded from the Union, when he led his hometown artillery to Harper's Ferry and seized the arsenal. Then he returned to Staunton and raised a cavalry, the First Partisan Rangers. He fought with Stonewall Jackson in the 1862 Valley Campaign, and in January 1863 had been rewarded with a promotion to brigadier. Now in command of the 18th Virginia Cavalry, the 62nd Virginia (Mounted) Infantry, the Virginia Partisan Rangers, and the Virginia (Staunton) Battery, he had gained a reputation as a first-class raider. As they advanced into Pennsylvania, his men were delighted to find that this reputation has preceded them. "The country was in a perfect panic when they heard of the coming of 'Imboden, the Guerilla,' as they call him," a soldier wrote in a letter published in the Staunton (Va.) Spectator on July 3, 1863. "Five thousand Pennsylvania 'Melish' advanced to meet him on the National road. He let the 'Melish' stand and wait for his coming, while a squadron of cavalry went around them and gathered the fine horses they had left at home!" But as important as these activities were, cutting enemy communication and rail lines and rounding up food and supplies, there was a kind of taint to it -- the sense that it wasn't quite as honorable as combat - and perhaps this marked Imboden as belonging to a lower class of soldier. [3]

General Lee was not at his headquarters when Imboden and his aide arrived around 11:30, so they lay back in the soft grass and waited. Nearly two hours passed before Imboden saw the general riding, all alone, down the road from A.P. Hill's camp, his beautiful horse Traveller moving along at a plodding walk. Lee greeted Imboden quietly; trying not to wake his exhausted staff, and made to dismount. "The effort to do so betrayed so much exhaustion that I hurriedly rose and stepped forward to assist him, but before I reached his side he had succeeded in alighting, and threw his army

across the saddle to rest, and fixing his eyes upon the ground leaned in silence and almost motionless against his equally weary horse - the two forming a striking and never-to-be-forgotten group."

Imboden stared at this poignant scene until the silence became "embarrassing," and he awkwardly blurted out: "General, this has been a hard day on you."

Lee looked up. "Yes, it has been a sad, sad day to us." He slumped back against Traveller. One, two minutes passed. Then he spoke of Pickett's brave Virginians, of how they might have carried the day had they only been properly supported. Then, he paused again. "Too bad! Too bad! Oh, too bad!"

Settled in his tent a few minutes later, Lee announced: "We must now return to Virginia. As many of our poor wounded as possible must be taken home. I have sent for you because your men and horses are fresh and in good condition, to guard and conduct our train back to Virginia. The duty will be arduous, responsible and dangerous," he cautioned, "for I am afraid you will be harassed by the enemy's cavalry. He promised all the additional artillery Imboden wanted - but no additional troops. His 2000 men and the few extra artillery crews would have to protect the nearly 13,000 wounded themselves.

Imboden was to proceed west along the Cashtown road, and then south by whichever road he choose, to Williamsport, Maryland. This would keep the cumbersome wagon train out of the way of the main column, which was to retreat by the shorter Fairfield road. At Williamsport, Imboden would stop only long enough to rest his horses. Then they were to ford the Potomac and moved without delay to Winchester, Virginia. [4]

His operation got underway early on the morning of July 4. "It was apparent by 9 o'clock that the wagons, ambulances and wounded could not be collected and made ready to move till late in the afternoon," he wrote of that long and frustrating day. Compounding the difficulties, at around noon "the very windows of heaven seemed to have opened." The downpour turned the field beside the Cashtown road into an instant quagmire. Horses and mules, already unnerved by three days of shelling, grew frenzied by the wind and could not be calmed. Wagons and artillery carriages became hopelessly entangled and began to sink in the deepening mud. "The deafening roar of the mingled sounds of heaven and earth all around us made it almost impossible to communicate orders, and equally difficult to execute them," wrote Imboden. Somehow, though, they got it done. In less than 14 hours, they had loaded 12,700 of the 18,735 wounded into some 1,200 wagons. [5]

By 4 pm on July 4th, the wagon train was in motion. The 18th Virginia Cavalry, under the command of the general's brother, Colonel George W. Imboden, formed the advance guard. General Imboden stayed behind to personally place detachments of troops and guns at intervals of third- or quarter-miles. It was well after dark when the last wagons rolled out of Cashtown and he set out for the head of the column.

Imboden would never forget that ride. From end to end, the wagon train was 17 miles long. "For four hours I hurried forward on my way to the front, and in all that time I was never out of the hearing of the groans and cries of the wounded and dying. " Inside each wagon lay men with shattered bones and open wound, laying on bare boards in springless wagons jolting over badly rutted roads. Everyone was wet and chilled from the intermittent rains; most had received neither food nor water nor medical attention for 36 hours or more. Imboden heard them begging to be left by the road to die, screaming obscenities, praying, calling for their wives, their mothers, their children. "No help could be rendered to any of the sufferers. No heed could be given to any of the appeals. Mercy and duty to the many forbade the loss of a moment in the vain effort then and there to comply with the prayers of the few. On! On! We must move on. The storm continued, and the darkness was appall!  
ing. There was no time even to fill a canteen with water for a dying man; for, except for the drivers and the guards, all were wounded and utterly helpless in the vast procession of misery. During this one night I realized more of the horrors of war than I had in all the two preceding years." [6]

But Imboden knew they had to push on through the night, for "in the darkness was our safety..." When daylight came, so would the risk of enemy attacks. "It got very dark," recalled one of the wounded, a soldier from the 16th North Carolina, "but there was no halt made, a steady trot being kept up all night. I could never tell you how we got along

without some accident." Imboden's orders were clear: if a wagon broke down, transfer the wounded and abandon it. Winding through Greenwood, Duffield, New Franklin, and Marion, Pine Stump Road quickly became a graveyard of derelict transports, some of them left where they had sunk in the axel-deep mud. [7]

By 4 am, they had reached Greencastle, Pennsylvania, near the Maryland border. Rev. J.C. Smith remembered the scene: the walking wounded, shivering in the cold and damp, constantly adjusting their clothes to catch rainwater in the folds to drink, or to take the pressure of inflamed wounds. How different they appeared from the proud, boastful troops that the invaded the town a week earlier. Smith felt little satisfaction. "No one, with any feelings of pity, will ever want to see such a sight even once in a lifetime." [8]

Not everyone in Greencastle was so charitable. The advance guard was about a mile past the town when a group of 30 or 40 citizens fell upon the train with axes in hand, and managed to hack the spokes out of more than a dozen wagon wheels before Imboden sent a detachment back to stop the trouble and arrest the troublemakers.

That was just the beginning. As expected, swarms of Union cavalry began to attack all along the length of the train, choosing the weakest sections and causing, in Imboden's words "great confusion," (and probably no small amount of terror to the defenseless wounded). He himself was almost captured when surprised by a band of 50 Union cavalymen while reconnoitering, only to be saved when brother George heard the firing, and wheeled the 18th Virginia back to counter the threat. Yet at the end of this long day of "desultory fighting and harassments," the train was rolling into Williamsport, having lost only a handful of wagons to the enemy.

Now Imboden faced an unexpected adversary: nature. The heavy rains of the previous two days had swelled the Potomac to more than 10 feet about its normal level - meaning he couldn't get his wagons across the ford. He was pinned against the river with 12,700 wounded and an irreplaceable store of wagons, horses and supplies....and less than 3,000 men to protect it all.

He moved swiftly to bring order to the situation. Surgeons went to work on the wounded. His men went from door to door, demanding provisions. The locals were required to cook for the men "on pain of having their kitchens occupied for that purpose by my men.... They readily complied," he later noted. He commandeered two small ferry-boats and started moving the less severely wounded across the river to Virginia. And all the while, he kept an eye out for the attack that would surely come. [9]

He didn't have long to wait. The next morning, July 6th, he learned that a large body of enemy cavalry was approaching from Frederick. Imboden ordered his artillery to be placed on the hills surrounding the town, then rounded up everyone - wagoners, quartermasters, commissaries, stragglers - who could hold a gun, giving him an additional 700 men to supplement his veteran troops. Organized into 7 companies, these recruits were placed under the watchful eyes of wounded line-officers who had volunteered for duty.

At about 2 pm, the enemy began filling the roads leading into Williamsport, and Imboden realized how heavily outnumbered he really was. The Union force totaled 23 cavalry regiments and 18 guns under the crack commands of Generals John Buford and Judson Kilpatrick - about 7000 men in all.

In the end, it was a combination of luck and skill that kept Imboden from disaster that day. Just as ammunition ran low, a fresh supply unexpectedly arrived on the Virginia side of the river. It was ferried across, the boxes hurriedly split open with axes. To make his forces seem larger, he formed a strong line on the left flank, then rapidly shifted them to the right, giving them the illusion of strength that seemed to keep the enemy off-balance. And as his lines began to waver from sheer exhaustion, word arrived from General Fitzhugh Lee that an additional force of 3,000 men would arrive within the hour. "The news was sent along our whole line, and was received with a wild and exultant yell," Imboden wrote. "We knew then that they field was won, and slowly pressed forward." By 8 pm, the battle was over. [10]

"The firing was beautiful and very rapid," one of Imboden's staff wrote the Richmond Enquirer soon after the engagement. "I never saw such destructive cannonading; one piece on our side lost thirteen men killed and wounded - They dismounted two regiments, but our wagoners were too much for the - They carried away nearly all of their dead

and wounded, though the ground was covered with dead horses. Our loss was about 125 men...We saved the immense wagon train of our army, and too much credit cannot be given to Gen. Imboden. He organized a force out of a mob, and whipped the enemy, outnumbering him nearly five to one. He is a splendid man, and on the field goes everywhere, no matter how great the danger." [11]

Imboden credited his victory to "extraordinary good fortune," more than anything else. He was deeply impressed with the bravery of his impromptu little army. "The wagoners fought so well that this became known as 'the wagoner's fight,'" he said. Many of them had been killed storming a farm that was being used as a sharpshooter's nest. He estimated his losses at 125 killed - he didn't say how many had been wounded - and never learned how many casualties he had inflicted on the enemy. [12]

"The expedition had for its object the destruction of the enemy's trains, supposed to be at Williamsport," Union General John Buford wrote in his official report of the action. "This, I regret to say, was not accomplished. The enemy was too strong for me, but he was punished for his obstinacy. His casualties were more than quadruple mine." It was an embarrassing loss, and a costly one. The rebel army was pouring in to Williamsport. The next day, he wrote "I can do nothing with the enemy except observe him." [13]

General Lee and the rest of the Army of Northern Virginia arrived in town on July 7, trapped as Imboden was, by the floodwaters. Imboden was immediately assigned a new task: to escort the 4,000 prisoners taken at Gettysburg to Staunton, Virginia, where they would be shipped to Richmond. Lee directed that he take only a single regiment, the 62nd Virginia, as guard. "When the general assigned me this duty, he expressed an apprehension that before I could reach Winchester, the Federal cavalry would cross at Harpers' Ferry, intercept and capture my guard and release the prisoners." It's doubtful a little think like that would have stopped Imboden: Staunton was his hometown, and his wife and children were there.

He had just started out for Winchester when he was ordered back to Lee's headquarters. "I halted my column and hurried back, was ferried across the river and galloped out on the Hagerstown road, where I had parted from the general that morning." He finally overtook Lee and his staff further down the road. Lee, remembering Imboden's familiarity with the countryside, asked him to detail all the fords from Williamsport to Cumberland, calling on another general (Imboden couldn't remember if it was Alexander of Long) to take careful notes. "He did not say so, but I felt that his situation was precarious in the extreme." The sooner the army got across the river, the better.

Lee was about to dismiss him when he paused and smiled. He gestured towards the swollen river. "Do you know this country well enough to tell me if it ever stops raining about here?" he asked, laughing. "If so, I should like to see a clear day soon." [14]

#### NOTES:

[1] For casualty figures, see Faust, Patricia L, ed., *Historical Times Illustrated Encyclopedia of the Civil War* (New York, Harper & Row, 1986), p 307.

[2] See Imboden, John "The Confederate Retreat," in *Battles and Leaders*, Vol. 3 (New York: The Century Company, 1884), p. 420.

[3] See the newspaper section of Valley of the Shadow Project web-page for excerpts from the Staunton (Va.) Vindicator: <http://jefferson.village.virginia.edu/vshadow2/Browser2/aubrowser/svjul63.html>.

[4] Imboden, p 421-3.

[5] Imboden, p 422-3.

[6] Imboden, p 424.

[7] Schildt, John W. *Roads from Gettysburg* (Shippensburg, PA: Burd Street Press, 1998), p 14-15.

[8] Schildt, p 15.

[9] Imboden, p 425-26.

[10] Imboden, p 426-28.

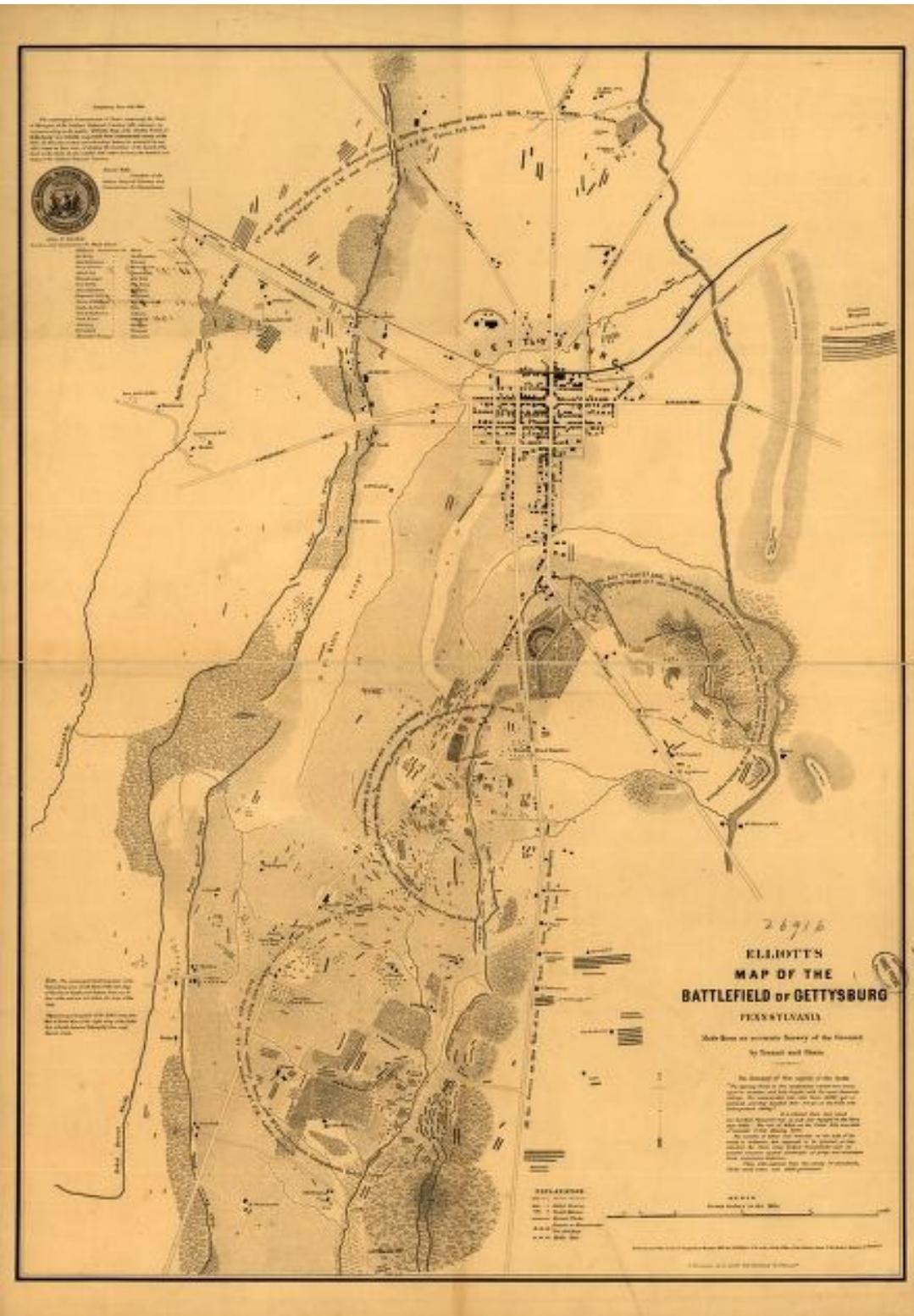
[11] See the newspaper section of the Valley of the Shadow Project web-page for excerpts from the Staunton (Va.) Spectator: <http://jefferson.virginia.edu/vshadow2/Browser2/aubrowser/ssjuly63.html>.

[12] Imboden, p 428.

[13] Schildt, p 59, 68.

[14] Imboden, p 429. <http://www.civilwarinteractive.com/ArticleGeneralJohnDImboden.htm>

# Interactive Map: Where Were Gettysburg's Battlefield Dead Buried?



*The Elliott Map* is a map of the battlefield of Gettysburg made from an accurate survey of the ground by transit and chain by S. G. Elliott and Company. Dated June 10, 1864, this map shows the locations of Union and Confederate burials, dead horses, breastworks, lunettes for artillery, and rifle pits, borough and farm buildings, as well as topographical features. Although the information appears impressive, a modern day research by historians and battlefield guides argues that the number of burials shown on the map [in particular in the Rose Farm area] are much less in number than what actually exists. The Library of Congress has an online and interactive *Elliott Map*. [This link](#) will bring you to the LOC map. Once you have the map on screen you can zoom in and out and scroll around the map by using the computer's mouse wheel. The Battle of Gettysburg Resource Center has a online compendium of historic and contemporary maps.

Here is  
[the](#)  
[link.](#)

## "It is said not one-sixth of the shells thrown by the rebels exploded"

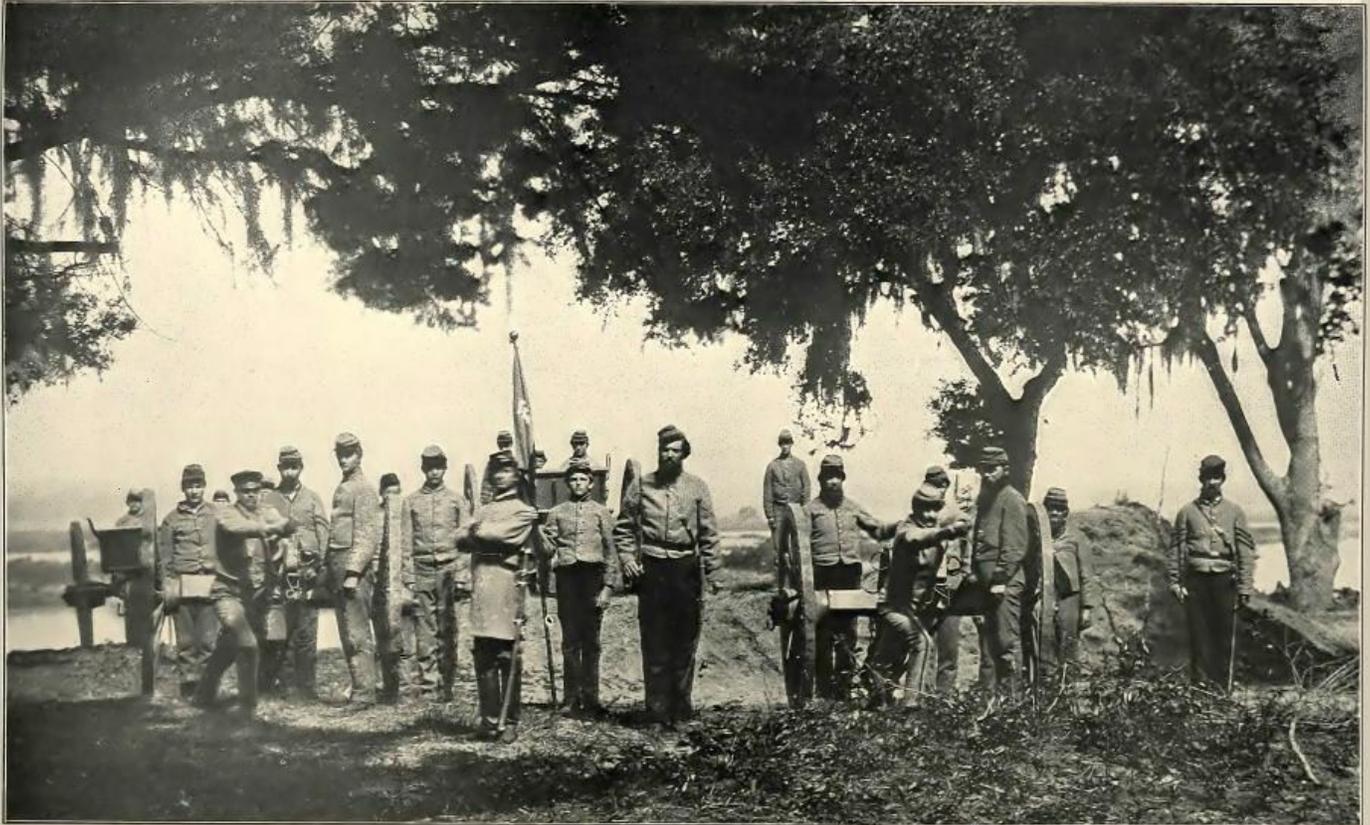
The following statement is from a Philadelphia Press correspondent's observation while in Gettysburg just after the battle:

"A close observer must notice an important fact in respect to the number of shells found on both sides of the field. The ground occupied by our forces is literally strewn with unexploded rebel shells, while along the Confederate fortifications very few can be found; but the fields and the woods are all covered with fragments of exploded shells. It is said not one-sixth of the shells thrown by the rebels exploded"

Are the defective Confederate cannon fuses largely to blame for the ineffectiveness of the cannonade prior to the PPT assault? Many of the Confederate shells went beyond their target before detonating or simply did not go off at all. Prior to Gettysburg there was an explosion at the Richmond arsenal resulting in future ordnance supplies coming out of Selma and Charleston. The CSA artillery had no idea that there was a problem with the fuses coming out of Selma and Charleston that would make them burn longer than a fuse of the same length coming out of Richmond. After Gettysburg the CSA investigated the fuses and it was found that they contained resin filler that would soften and mix with the powder in humid warm weather such as that in the first days of July. The filler mixing with the powder was the cause for the longer burning fuses and non-detonating shells.

<http://civilwartalk.com/threads/confederate-artillery-day-3.69838/>

<http://www.sonofthesouth.net/civil-war-pictures/records/confederate-artillery.htm>



### YOUNG ARTILLERISTS OF THE CONFEDERACY, 1863

This remarkable Confederate photograph instantly recalls the tyrant Lincoln's oft-quoted saying that "war robbed both the cradle and the grave." Charleston was, throughout the war, active in providing for her own defense, and the women of the city constantly busied themselves in making flags and uniforms for the troops. This home company was much better equipped than the troops in the field at this stage of the war. The youth of some of the men here is noticeable. The standard-bearer is a mere boy hardly sixteen. As early as April 16, 1862 the Confederate Congress conscripted all men over 18 and under 45 to serve during the war. The Charleston artillery, because Charleston was one of the principal ports for blockade runners, was well equipped with guns and ammunition. At many critical moments, as at Gettysburg, Confederate batteries in the field ran entirely out of ammunition, hence artillerymen stationed near the source of supply were most fortunate.

# Johnson: Remembering the Gettysburg Reunion of 1913

July 22, 2009 - Do you know who Gen. Robert Edward Lee, Major Gen. George Edward Pickett and Major Gen. Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain were? Are children still taught about these men and all those who met on the famous War Between the States battlefield at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania? Some call the Gettysburg Battlefield the most haunted place in America as many thousands died on that fateful month of July 1863.

The story of the Battle of Gettysburg and 50th Anniversary Reunion would make for a heart-warming and touching TV Historic mini-series or Hollywood movie.

“Comrades and friends, these splendid statues of marble and granite and bronze shall finally crumble to dust, and in the ages to come, will perhaps be forgotten, but the spirit that has called this great assembly of our people together, on this field, shall live forever.” - Dr. Nathaniel D. Cox at 1913 Gettysburg Reunion



The summer heat of July 1913 did not keep the old Confederate and Union Veterans from attending the 50th anniversary of the Battle of Gettysburg. It has been written that over 50,000 sons of the North and South came for what has been called the largest combined reunion of War Between the States veterans.

The youngest veteran was reported to be 61 and the oldest was 112 years young.

No one dared to criticize the United States and Confederate flags that flew side by side at the Gettysburg soldier's reunion of honored men who had been enemies on the field of battle just 50 years earlier. Some of today's politicians and people's rights groups could learn something from these grand old men of yesterday. Knowledge is Power!!

The State of Pennsylvania hosted the 1913 reunion at the insisting of state Governor John K. Tener. Tener also encouraged other states to arrange rail transportation for the participants. Down South in Dixie, the United Daughters of the Confederacy helped raise money for the transportation and uniforms for their Confederate veterans.

The soldiers of Blue and Gray, Black and White, came with heads high and full of war stories. It is written that the hosts did not count on Black Confederates attending the meeting and had no place to put them but the White Confederates made room for their Southern brothers. Black Union veterans also attended this event.

It is written that nearly 700,000 meals were served that included fried chicken, roast pork sandwiches, ice cream and Georgia watermelon. The temperature soared to 100 degrees and almost 10,000 veterans were treated for heat exhaustion and several hundred more were hospitalized. The United States Army was also present in support and the old men loved the attention.

A highlight of the reunion was the Confederate Veterans walk on the path of Gen. George Pickett's charge that was greeted, this time, by a handshake from the Union Veterans.



President Woodrow Wilson spoke to those veterans with compassion and appreciation, and said, "These venerable men crowding here to this famous field have set us a great example of devotion and utter sacrifice. They were willing to die that the people might live. But their task is done. Their day is turned into evening. They look to us to perfect what they have established. Their work is handed to us, to be done in another way but not in another spirit. Our day is not over; it is upon us in full tide."

These men of Blue and Gray are gone but let's never forget them. God Bless!!

~ The Author ~

Calvin E. Johnson, Jr. is a member of the Sons of Confederate Veterans, is a retired government employee, and a Freelance writer of American Historical stories and author of the book, 'When America Stood for God, Family and Country.' His home for 22 years has been in historical Kennesaw, Georgia, home of the famous Civil War Locomotive 'The General.' Send the author an email with your comments and inquiries to [cjohnson1861@bellsouth.net](mailto:cjohnson1861@bellsouth.net)



# General Lee's Final and Full Report of the Pennsylvania Campaign and Battle of Gettysburg.

General Lee's report was originally printed in the Historical Magazine of New York, for February, 1869, and was reprinted by General Early in the Southern Magazine for August, 1862, with the following explanatory letter:

Editor of the Southern Magazine :

Sir—In the Historical Magazine for February, 1869, published by Mr. Henry B. Dawson, at Morrisania, New York, there is a copy of General Lee's report of the Pennsylvania campaign mid the battle of Gettysburg. This report was furnished to the Historical Magazine by Mr. William Swinton, who says that it chanced to be on the person of one of General Lee's staff-officers at the time of the destruction of his headquarters papers on the retreat from Petersburg; but he declines to state how he came in possession of it. In a conversation with General Lee, in April, 1869, I was informed by him that he had received a copy of the report as published, and he said that the report was substantially correct, though he was at a loss as to how Mr. Swinton got possession of it. He stated that the report as prepared for the Adjutant-General at Richmond was with his other papers in the headquarters wagons on the retreat, and that when he found the wagons cut off and about to fall into the hands of the enemy's cavalry, he sent a courier to destroy all the papers; and he thought it possible that this paper may have escaped destruction and been picked up by some straggler or other person. After General Lee's death I received a copy of the number of the Historical Magazine containing the report from Mr. Dawson. and when in Baltimore in April, 1871, I showed it to Colonel Charles Marshall, who then informed me that when the report was written it was copied under his superintendence, and that the copy only was returned to General Lee, he (Colonel Marshall) retaining the rough draft, in which a number of corrections had been made. He also said that this rough draft as corrected happened to be with some of his own papers which he had with him on the retreat and at the time of the surrender, and thus escaped destruction; and that he loaned it to Mr. Swinton shortly after the close of the war, who, he supposed, copied it while in his possession, and was thus enabled to furnish the copy to the Historical Magazine.

There can then be no question about the substantial authenticity of the report; and as it is a document of great historical value, I request that it be published in your valuable journal, in order that it may be more accessible to the officers and soldiers of the Army of Northern Virginia and the Southern people, very few of whom have had an opportunity of seeing it, as the Historical Magazine, though a very valuable and impartial publication, has scarcely any circulation in the South.

There is an error in the report as published in locating the entrenched position which my command assaulted and carried at the time of the capture of Winchester, on the Newtown road. It should be on the Pughtown road, which is on the northwest of Winchester, while the Newtown road (the Valley pike) is on the south of the town. This mistake was probably made in copying or printing the report, and I have made the correction to conform to the facts of the case by merely substituting Pughtown for Newtown. With this correction, the general accuracy of the report as now given will be recognized by all who participated in the memorable campaign into Pennsylvania, and it is eminently worthy of preservation as containing General Lee's own account of a campaign which has been much criticised by persons not well acquainted with the facts. If there are any variations between the published report and the original now in the hands of Colonel Marshall, he can make the proper corrections.

Very respectfully your obedient servant,  
J. A. EARLY.

June 29th, 1872,

We received a few days ago a very valuable confirmation of the substantial accuracy of this document, in the shape of a MS. copy of General Lee's report, found among the papers of Mr. Michael Kelly, who was a confidential clerk to General S. Cooper.

Mr. Kelly died about two years ago, and the lady who sends us the MS. (Mrs. Henry Pye, of Richmond,) says of him: "He was a young man of high character, unblemished reputation, and one in whom was placed the most implicit confidence."

As this report is of very great value and importance, and is not accessible to many who desire to see it, we will print it in full from our MS. copy, which was doubtless either the original copy sent from General Lee's headquarters, or a correct copy of that made in the office of General Cooper and preserved by Mr. Kelly.

It will be seen by comparison with the printed copy, which we have carefully made, that the MS. corrects several verbal errors in the printed copy (notably the one to which General Early calls attention, the printing of Newton instead of Pughtown and supplies several paragraphs which the printed copy omits. These omissions refer to the conduct of our officers and men, and to our captures at Gettysburg

With this explanation we give the report entire as follows:

## **PENNSYLVANIA CAMPAIGN.**

Headquarters Army Northern Virginia,  
January, 1864.

General S. Cooper, A. & I. General C. S. A., Richmond, Va.:

General—I have the honor to submit a detailed report of the operations of this army from the time it left the vicinity of Fredericksburg early in June to its occupation of the line of the Rapidan in August.

Upon the retreat of the Federal army commanded by Major-General Hooker from Chancellorsville, it reoccupied the ground north of the Rappahannock, opposite Fredericksburg, where it could not be attacked except at a disadvantage.

It was determined to draw it from this position, and, if practicable, to transfer the scene of hostilities beyond the Potomac. The execution of this purpose also embraced the expulsion of the force under General Milroy, which had infested the lower Shenandoah Valley during the preceding winter and spring. If unable to attain the valuable results which might be expected to follow a decided advantage gained over the enemy in Maryland or Pennsylvania, it was hoped that we should at least so far disturb his plan for the summer campaign as to prevent its execution during the season of active operations.

The commands of Longstreet and Ewell were put in motion, and encamped around Culpeper Courthouse on the 7th of June. As soon as their march was discovered by the enemy, he threw a force across the Rappahannock about two miles below Fredericksburg, apparently for the purpose of observation. Hill's corps was left to watch these troops, with instructions to follow the movements of the army as soon as they should retire.

The cavalry under General Stuart, which had been concentrated near Culpeper Courthouse, was attacked on the 9th June by a large force of Federal cavalry, supported by infantry, which crossed the Rappahannock at Beverly's and Kelly's fords. After a severe engagement, which continued from early in the morning until late in the afternoon, the enemy was compelled to recross the river with heavy loss, leaving about five hundred prisoners, three pieces of artillery and several colors in our hands.

General Imboden and General Jenkins had been ordered to cooperate in the projected expedition into the Valley, General Imboden by moving towards Romney with his command, to prevent the troops guarding the Baltimore and Ohio railroad from reinforcing those at Winchester, while General Jenkins advanced directly towards the latter place with his cavalry brigade, supported by a battalion of infantry and a battery of the Maryland Line.

General Ewell left Culpeper Courthouse on the 10th June. He crossed the branches of the Shenandoah near Front Royal, and reached Cedarville on the 12th, where he was joined by General Jenkins. Detaching General Rodes with his division and the greater part of Jenkins' brigade to dislodge a force of the enemy stationed at Berryville, General Ewell, with the rest of his command, moved upon Winchester, Johnson's division advancing by the Front Royal road, Early's by the Valley turnpike, which it entered at Newtown, where it was joined by the Maryland troops.

## **BATTLE OF WINCHESTER.**

The enemy was driven in on both roads, and our troops halted in line of battle near the town on the evening of the 13th. The same day the force which had occupied Berryville retreated to Winchester on the approach of General Rodes. The following morning General Ewell ordered General Early to carry an entrenched position northwest of Winchester, near the Pughtown road, which the latter officer, upon examining the ground, discovered would command the principal fortifications.

To cover the movement of General Early, General Johnson took position between the road to Millwood and that to Berryville, and advanced his skirmishers towards the town. General Early, leaving a portion of his command to engage the enemy's attention, with the remainder gained a favorable position without being perceived, and about 5 P. M. twenty pieces of artillery, under Lieutenant-Colonel H. P. Jones, opened suddenly upon the entrenchments. The enemy's guns were soon silenced. Hays' brigade then advanced to the assault and carried the works by storm, capturing six rifled pieces, two of which were turned upon and dispersed a column which was forming to retake the position.

The enemy immediately abandoned the works on the left of those taken by Hays, and retired into his main fortifications, which General Early prepared to assail in the morning. The loss of the advanced works, however, rendered the others untenable, and the enemy retreated in the night, abandoning his sick and wounded, together with his artillery, wagons and stores. Anticipating such a movement as soon as he heard of Early's success, General Ewell directed General Johnson to occupy with part of his command a point on the Martinsburg road about two and a half miles from Winchester, where he could either intercept the enemy's retreat, or aid in an attack, should further resistance be offered in the morning. General Johnson marched with Nicholls' and part of Stuart's brigades, accompanied by Lieutenant-Colonel Andrews, with a detachment of his artillery, the Stonewall Brigade being ordered to follow. Finding the road to the place indicated by General Ewell difficult of passage in the darkness, General Johnson pursued that leading by Jordan's Springs to Stephenson's depot, where he took a favorable position on the Martinsburg road, about five miles from Winchester. Just as his line was formed, the retreating column, consisting of the main body of General Milroy's army, arrived, and immediately attacked him. The enemy, though in superior force, consisting of both infantry and cavalry, was gallantly repulsed, and finding all efforts to cut his way unavailing, he sent strong flanking parties simultaneously to the right and left, still keeping up a heavy fire in front. The party on the right was driven back and pursued by the Stonewall Brigade, which opportunely arrived. That on the left was broken and dispersed by the Second and Tenth Louisiana regiments, aided by the artillery, and in a short time nearly the whole infantry force, amounting to more than twenty-three hundred men, with eleven stands of colors, surrendered, the cavalry alone escaping. General Milroy, with a small party of fugitives, fled to Harper's Ferry. The number of prisoners taken in this action exceeded the force engaged under General Johnson, who speaks in terms of well deserved praise of the conduct of the officers and men under his command.

In the meantime General Rodes marched from Berryville to Martinsburg, reaching the latter place in the afternoon of the 14th. The enemy made a show of resistance, but soon gave way, the cavalry and artillery retreating towards Williamsport, the infantry towards Shepherdstown, under cover of night. The route taken by the latter was not known until it was too late to follow, but the former were pursued so rapidly, Jenkins' troops leading, that they were forced to abandon five of their six pieces of artillery. About two hundred prisoners were taken, but the enemy destroyed most of his stores.

These operations resulted in the expulsion of the enemy from the Valley, the capture of four thousand prisoners, with a corresponding number of small arms, twenty-eight pieces of superior artillery, including those taken by General Rodes and General Hays, about three hundred wagons and as many horses, together with a considerable quantity of ordnance, commissary and quartermaster's stores. Our entire loss was 47 killed, 219 wounded, and three missing.

## **MARCH INTO PENNSYLVANIA.**

On the night of Ewell's appearance at Winchester, the enemy in front of A. P. Hill at Fredericksburg, recrossed the Rappahannock, and the whole army of General Hooker withdrew from the north side of the river. In order to mislead

him as to our intentions, and at the same time protect Hill's corps in its march up the Rappahannock, Longstreet left Culpeper Courthouse on the 15th, and advancing along the eastern side of the Blue Ridge, occupied Ashby's and Snicker's gaps. He had been joined, while at Culpeper, by General Pickett, with three brigades of his division.

General Stuart, with three brigades of cavalry, moved on Longstreet's right, and took position in front of the gaps.

Hampton and Jones' brigades remained along the Rappahannock and Hazle rivers, in front of Culpeper Courthouse, with instructions to follow the main body as soon as Hill's corps had passed that point. On the 17th, Fitz. Lee's brigade, under Colonel Munford, which was on the road to Snicker's gap, was attacked near Aldie by the Federal cavalry. The attack was repulsed with loss, and the brigade held its ground until ordered to fall back, its right being threatened by another body coming from Hopewell towards Middleburg. The latter force was driven from Middleburg, and pursued towards Hopewell by Robertson's brigade, which arrived about dark. Its retreat was intercepted by W. H. F. Lee's brigade, under Colonel Chambliss, and the greater part of a regiment captured.

During the three succeeding days there was much skirmishing, General Stuart taking a position west of Middleburg, where he awaited the rest of his command. General Jones arrived on the 19th, and General Hampton in the afternoon of the following day, having repulsed on his march a cavalry force sent to reconnoitre in the direction of Warrenton. On the 21st, the enemy attacked with infantry and cavalry, and obliged General Stuart, after a brave resistance, to fall back to the gaps of the mountains. The enemy retired the next day, having advanced only a short distance beyond Upperville.

In these engagements the cavalry sustained a loss of five hundred and ten killed, wounded and missing. Among them were several valuable officers, whose names are mentioned in General Stuart's report. One piece of artillery was disabled and left on the field.

The enemy's loss was heavy. About four hundred prisoners were taken and several stands of colors.

The Federal army was apparently guarding the approaches to Washington, and manifested no disposition to resume the offensive. In the meantime the progress of Ewell, who was already in Maryland, with Jenkins' cavalry advanced into Pennsylvania as far as Chambersburg, rendered it necessary that the rest of the army should be within supporting distance, and Hill having reached the Valley, Longstreet was withdrawn to the west side of the Shenandoah, and the two corps encamped near Berryville.

General Stuart was directed to hold the mountain passes with part of his command as long as the enemy remained south of the Potomac, and with the remainder to cross into Maryland, and place himself on the right of General Ewell, upon the suggestion of the former officer that he could damage the enemy and delay his passage of the river by getting in his rear, he was authorized to do so, and it was left to his discretion whether to enter Maryland east or west of the Blue Ridge, but he was instructed to lose no time in placing his command on the right of our column as soon as he should perceive the enemy moving northward.

On the 22d, General Ewell marched into Pennsylvania with Rodes' and Johnson's divisions, preceded by Jenkins' cavalry, taking the road from Hagerstown through Chambersburg to Carlisle, where he arrived on the 27th. Early's division, which had occupied Boonsboro', moved by a parallel road to Greenwood, and in pursuance of instructions previously given to General Ewell, marched towards York. On the 24th, Longstreet and Hill were put in motion to follow Ewell, and on the 27th, encamped near Chambersburg.

General Imboden, under the orders before referred to, had been operating on Ewell's left, while the latter was advancing into Maryland. He drove off the troops guarding the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, and destroyed all the important bridges on that route from Martinsburg to Cumberland, besides inflicting serious damage upon the Chesapeake and Ohio canal. He was at Hancock when Longstreet and Hill reached Chambersburg, and was directed to proceed to the latter place by way of McConnellsburg, collecting supplies for the army on his route.

The cavalry force at this time with the army, consisting of Jenkins' brigade and White's battalion, was not greater than was required to accompany the advance of General Ewell and General Early, with whom it performed valuable service,

as appears from their reports. It was expected that as soon as the Federal army should cross the Potomac, General Stuart would give notice of its movements, and nothing having been heard from him since our entrance into Maryland, it was inferred that the enemy had not yet left Virginia. Orders were therefore issued to move upon Harrisburg. The expedition of General Early to York was designed in part to prepare for this undertaking, by breaking the railroad between Baltimore and Harrisburg, and seizing the bridge over the Susquehanna at Wrightsville. General Early succeeded in the first object, destroying a number of bridges above and below York, but on the approach of the troops sent by him to Wrightsville, a body of Militia stationed at that place, fled across the river, and burned the bridge in their retreat. General Early then marched to rejoin his corps. The advance against Harrisburg was arrested by intelligence received from a scout on the night of the 28th, to the effect that the army of General Hooker had crossed the Potomac and was approaching the South Mountains. In the absence of the cavalry it was impossible to ascertain his intentions, but to deter him from advancing further west, and intercepting our communications with Virginia, it was determined to concentrate the army east of the mountains.

## **BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG.**

Hill's corps was accordingly ordered to move towards Cashtown on the 29th and Longstreet to follow the next day, leaving Pickett's division at Chambersburg to guard the rear until relieved by Imboden.

General Ewell was recalled from Carlisle and directed to join the army at Cashtown or Gettysburg, as circumstances might require. The advance of the enemy to the latter place was unknown, and the weather being inclement, the march was conducted with a view to the comfort of the troops.

Heth's division reached Cashtown on the 29th, and the following morning Pettigrew's brigade, sent by General Heth to procure supplies at Gettysburg, found it occupied by the enemy. Being ignorant of the extent of his force, General Pettigrew was unwilling to hazard an attack with his single brigade, and returned to Cashtown. General Hill arrived with Pender's division in the evening, and the following morning, July 1st, advanced with these two divisions, accompanied by Pegram's and MacIntosh's battalions of artillery, to ascertain the strength of the enemy, whose force was supposed to consist chiefly of cavalry.

The leading division, under General Heth, found the enemy's videttes about three miles west of Gettysburg, and continued to advance until within a mile of the town, when two brigades were sent forward to reconnoitre. They drove in the advance of the enemy very gallantly, but subsequently encountered largely superior numbers, and were compelled to retire with loss, Brigadier-General Archer, commanding one of the brigades, being taken prisoner.

General Heth then prepared for action, and as soon as Pender arrived to support him, was ordered by General Hill to advance. The artillery was placed in position, and the engagement opened with vigor. General Heth pressed the enemy steadily back, breaking his first and second lines, and attacking his third with great resolution. About 2½ P. M. the advance of Ewell's corps, consisting of Rodes' division, with Carter's battalion of artillery, arrived by the Middletown road, and forming on Heth's left, nearly at right angles with his line, became warmly engaged with fresh numbers of the enemy. Heth's troops having suffered heavily in their protracted content with a superior force, were relieved by Pender's, and Early coming up by the Heidlersburg road soon afterwards took position on the left of Rodes, when a general advance was made.

The enemy gave way on all sides, and were driven through Gettysburg with great loss. Major-General Reynolds, who was in command, was killed. More than five thousand prisoners, exclusive of a large number of wounded, three pieces of artillery, and several colors, were captured. Among the prisoners were two Brigadier-Generals, one of whom was badly wounded.

Our own loss was heavy, including a number of officers, among whom were Major-General Heth, slightly, and Brigadier-General Scales, of Pender's division, severely wounded.

The enemy retired to a range of hills south of Gettysburg, where he displayed a strong force of infantry and artillery.

It was ascertained from prisoners that we had been engaged with two corps of the army formerly commanded by General Hooker, and that the remainder of the army, under General Meade, was approaching Gettysburg. Without information as to its proximity, the strong position which the enemy had assumed could not be attacked without danger of exposing the four divisions present, already weakened and exhausted by a long and bloody struggle, to overwhelming numbers of fresh troops.

General Ewell was therefore instructed to carry the hill occupied by the enemy if he found it practicable, but to avoid a general engagement until the arrival of the other divisions of the army, which were ordered to hasten forward. He decided to await Johnson's division, which had marched from Carlisle by the road west of the mountains, to guard the trains of his corps, and consequently did not reach Gettysburg until a late hour. In the meantime the enemy occupied the point which General Ewell designed to seize, but in what force could not be ascertained owing to the darkness. An intercepted dispatch showed that another corps had halted that afternoon four miles from Gettysburg. Under these circumstances it was decided not to attack until the arrival of Longstreet, two of whose divisions, those of Hood and McLaws, encamped about four miles in the rear during the night. Anderson's division, of Hill's corps, came up after the engagement.

It had not been intended to deliver a general battle so far from our base unless attacked, but coming unexpectedly upon the whole Federal army, to withdraw through the mountains with our extensive trains would have been difficult and dangerous. At the same time we were unable to wait an attack, as the country was unfavorable for collecting supplies in the presence of the enemy, who could restrain our foraging parties by holding the mountain passes with local and other troops. A battle therefore had become, in a measure, unavoidable, and the success already gained gave hope of a favorable issue.

The enemy occupied a strong position, with his right upon two commanding elevations adjacent to each other, one southeast, and the other, known as Cemetery Hill, immediately south of the town, which lay at its base. His line extended thence upon the high ground along the Emmettsburg road, with a steep ridge in rear, which was also occupied. This ridge was difficult of ascent, particularly the two hills above mentioned, as forming its northern extremity, and a third at the other end on which the enemy's left rested. Numerous stone and rail fences along the slope served to afford protection to his troops and impede our advance. In his front the ground was undulating and generally open for about three quarters of a mile.

General Ewell's corps constituted our left, Johnson's division being opposite the height adjoining Cemetery Hill, Early's in the centre, in front of the north face of the latter, and Rodes upon his right. Hill's corps faced the west side of Cemetery Hill, and extended nearly parallel to the Emmettsburg road, making an angle with Ewell's. Pender's division formed his left, Anderson's his right, Heth's, under Brigadier-General Pettigrew, being in reserve. His artillery, under Colonel Walker, was posted in eligible position along his line.

It was determined to make the principal attack upon the enemy's left and endeavor to gain a position from which it was thought that our artillery could be brought to bear with effect. Longstreet was directed to place the divisions of McLaws and Hood on the right of Hill, partially enveloping the enemy's left, which he was to drive in. General Hill was ordered to threaten the enemy's centre to prevent reinforcements being drawn to either wing, and co-operate with his right division in Longstreet's attack.

General Ewell was instructed to make a simultaneous demonstration upon the enemy's right, to be converted into a real attack should opportunity offer.

About four P. M. Longstreet's batteries opened, and soon afterwards Hood's division, on the extreme right, moved to the attack. McLaws followed somewhat later, four of Anderson's brigades, those of Wilcox, Perry, Wright and Posey, supporting him on the left in the order named. The enemy was soon driven from his position on the Emmettsburg road, to the cover of a ravine and a line of stone fences at the foot of the ridge in his rear. He was dislodged from these after a severe struggle, and retired up the ridge, leaving a number of his batteries in our possession. Wilcox's and Wright's brigades advanced with great gallantry, breaking successive lines of the enemy's infantry, and

compelling him to abandon much of his artillery. Wilcox reached the foot, and Wright gained the crest of the ridge itself, driving the enemy down the opposite side; but, having become separated from McLaws, and gone beyond the other two brigades of the division, they were attacked in front and on both flanks, and compelled to retire, being unable to bring off any of the captured artillery. McLaws' left also fell back, and it being now nearly dark, General Longstreet determined to await the arrival of General Pickett. He disposed his command to hold the ground gained on the right, withdrawing his left to the first position from which the enemy had been driven. Four pieces of artillery, several hundred prisoners, and two regimental flags were taken.

As soon as the engagement began on our right, General Johnson opened with his artillery, and about two hours later advanced up the hill next to Cemetery Hill with three brigades, the fourth being detained by a demonstration on his left. Soon afterwards General Early attacked Cemetery Hill with two brigades, supported by a third, the fourth having been previously detached. The enemy had greatly increased the strength of the positions assaulted by Johnson and Early by earthworks.

The troops of the former moved steadily up the steep and rugged ascent under a heavy fire, driving the enemy into his entrenchments, part of which were carried by Stewart's brigade and a number of prisoners taken. The contest was continued to a late hour, but without further advantage. On Cemetery Hill the attack by Early's leading brigades those of Hays, and Hoke under Colonel Avery—was made with vigor. Two lines of the enemy's infantry were dislodged from the cover of some stone and board fences on the side of the ascent and driven back into the works on the crest, into which our troops forced their way and seized several pieces of artillery. A heavy force advanced against their right, which was without support, and they were compelled to retire, bringing with them about one hundred prisoners and four stands of colors. General Ewell had directed General Rodes to attack in concert with Early, covering his right, and had requested Brigadier-General Lane, then commanding Pender's division, to co-operate on the right of Rodes. When the time of attack arrived, General Rodes not having his troops in position, was unprepared to cooperate with General Early, and before he could get in readiness the latter had been obliged to retire from want of expected support on his right. General Lane was prepared to give the assistance required of him, and so informed General Rodes; but the latter deemed it useless to advance after the failure of Early's attack.

In this engagement our loss in men and officers was large. Maj.-Generals Hood and Pender, Brigadier-Generals Jones, Semmes, G. T. Anderson and Barksdale, and Colonel Avery, commanding Hoke's brigade, were wounded—the last two mortally. Generals Pender and Semmes died after their removal to Virginia.

The result of this day's operations induced the belief that with proper concert of action, and with the increased support that the positions gained on the right would enable the artillery to render the assaulting columns, we should ultimately succeed, and it was accordingly determined to continue the attack.

The general plan was unchanged: Longstreet, reinforced by Pickett's three brigades, which arrived near the battle-field during the afternoon of the 2d, was ordered to attack the next morning, and General Ewell was directed to assail the enemy's right at the same time. The latter during the night reinforced General Johnson with two brigades from Rodes' and one from Early's division.

General Longstreet's dispositions were not completed as early as was expected, but before notice could be sent to General Ewell, General Johnson had already become engaged, and it was too late to recall him. The enemy attempted to recover the works taken the preceding evening, but was repulsed, and General Johnson attacked in turn. After a gallant and prolonged struggle, in which the enemy was forced to abandon part of his entrenchments, General Johnson found himself unable to carry the strongly fortified crest of the hill. The projected attack on the enemy's left not having been made, he was enabled to hold his right with a force largely superior to that of General Johnson, and finally to threaten his flank and rear, rendering it necessary for him to retire to his original position about one P. M.

General Longstreet was delayed by a force occupying the high, rocky hills on the enemy's extreme left, from which his troops could be attacked in reverse as they advanced. His operations had been embarrassed the day previous by the same cause, and he now deemed it necessary to defend his flank and rear with the divisions of Hood and McLaws. He was, therefore, reinforced by Heth's division and two brigades of Pender's, to the command of which Major-General

Trimble was assigned. General Hill was directed to hold his line with the rest of his command, afford General Longstreet further assistance if requested, and avail himself of any success that might be gained.

A careful examination was made of the ground secured by Longstreet, and his batteries placed in positions which it was believed would enable them to silence those of the enemy.

Hill's artillery, and part of Ewell's, was ordered to open simultaneously, and the assaulting column to advance under cover of the combined fire of the three. The batteries were directed to be pushed forward as the infantry progressed, protect their flanks, and support their attacks closely.

About 1 P. M. at a given signal, a heavy cannonade was opened and continued for about two hours with marked effect upon the enemy. His batteries replied vigorously at first, but towards the close their fire slackened perceptibly, and General Longstreet ordered forward the column of attack, consisting of Pickett's and Heth's divisions, in two lines, Pickett on the right. Wilcox's brigade marched in rear of Pickett's right to guard that flank, and Heth's was supported by Lane's and Scale's brigades under General Trimble.

The troops moved steadily on under a heavy fire of musketry and artillery, the main attack being directed against the enemy's left-centre. His batteries reopened as soon as they appeared. Our own having nearly exhausted their ammunition in the protracted cannonade that preceded the advance of the infantry, were unable to reply, or render the necessary support to the attacking party. Owing to this fact, which was unknown to me when the assault took place, the enemy was enabled to throw a strong force of infantry against our left, already wavering under a concentrated fire of artillery from the ridge in front, and from Cemetery Hill on the left. It finally gave way, and the right, after penetrating the enemy's lines, entering his advance works, and capturing some of his artillery, was attacked simultaneously in front and on both flanks and driven back with heavy loss. The troops were rallied and reformed, but the enemy did not pursue.

A large number of brave officers and men fell or were captured on this occasion. Of Pickett's three brigade commanders, Generals Armistead and Garnett were killed, and General Kemper dangerously wounded. Major General Trimble, and Brigadier General Pettigrew were also wounded, the former severely.

The movements of the army preceding the battle of Gettysburg had been much embarrassed by the absence of the cavalry. As soon as it was known that the enemy had crossed into Maryland, orders were sent to the brigades of Robertson and Jones, which had been left to guard the passes of the Blue Ridge, to rejoin the army without delay, and it was expected that General Stuart with the remainder of his command would soon arrive. In the exercise of the discretion given him when Longstreet and Hill marched into Maryland, General Stuart determined to pass around the rear of the Federal army with three brigades, and cross the Potomac between it and Washington, believing that he would be able by that route to place himself on our right flank in time to keep us properly advised of the enemy's movements.

He marched from Salem on the night of the 24th June, intending to pass west of Centreville, but found the enemy's forces so distributed as to render that route impracticable. Adhering to his original plan, he was forced to make a wide detour through Buckland and Brentsville, and crossed the Occoquan at Wolf Run Shoals on the morning of the 27th. Continuing his march through Fairfax Courthouse and Dranesville, he arrived at the Potomac, below the mouth of Seneca creek in the evening. He found the river much swollen by the recent rains, but after great exertion, gained the Maryland shore before midnight with his whole command. He now ascertained that the Federal army, which he had discovered to be drawing towards the Potomac, had crossed the day before, and was moving towards Fredericktown, thus interposing itself between him and our forces.

He accordingly marched northward, through Rockville and Westminster, to Hanover, Pennsylvania, where he arrived on the 30th, but the enemy advanced with equal rapidity on his left, and continued to obstruct communication with our main body.

Supposing from such information as he could obtain that part of the army was at Carlisle, he left Hanover that night, and proceeded thither by way of Dover. He reached Carlisle on the 1st July, when he received orders to proceed to Gettysburg. He arrived in the afternoon of the following day and took position on General Ewell's left. His leading brigade under General Hampton encountered and repulsed a body of the enemy's cavalry at Hunterstown endeavoring to reach our rear.

General Stuart had several skirmishes during his march, and at Hanover quite a severe engagement took place with a strong force of cavalry, which was finally compelled to withdraw from the town.

The prisoners taken by the cavalry and paroled at various places amounted to about eight hundred, and at Rockville a large train of wagons coming from Washington was intercepted and captured. Many of them were destroyed, but one hundred and twenty-five, with all the animals of the train, were secured.

The ranks of the cavalry were much reduced by its long and arduous march, repeated conflicts and insufficient supplies of food and forage, but the day after its arrival at Gettysburg it engaged the enemy's cavalry with unabated spirit, and effectually protected our left. In this action Brigadier-General Hampton was seriously wounded while acting with his accustomed gallantry.

Robertson's and Jones' brigades arrived on the 3d July, and were stationed upon our right flank. The severe loss sustained by the army, and the reduction of its ammunition, rendered another attempt to dislodge the enemy inadvisable, and it was therefore determined to withdraw.

The trains, with such of the wounded as could bear removal, were ordered to Williamsport on the 4th July, part moving through Cashtown and Greencastle, escorted by General Imboden, and the remainder by the Fairfield road. The army retained its position until dark, when it was put in motion for the Potomac by the last named route. A heavy rain continued throughout the night, and so much impeded its progress that Ewell's corps, which brought up the rear, did not leave Gettysburg until late in the forenoon of the following day. The enemy offered no serious interruption, and after an arduous march we arrived at Hagerstown in the afternoon of the 6th and morning of the 7th July.

The great length of our trains made it difficult to guard them effectually in passing through the mountains, and a number of wagons and ambulances were captured. They succeeded in reaching Williamsport on the 6th, but were unable to cross the Potomac on account of the high stage of water. Here they were attacked by a strong force of cavalry and artillery, which was gallantly repulsed by General Imboden, whose command had been strengthened by several batteries and by two regiments of infantry which had been detached at Winchester to guard prisoners, and were returning to the army. While the enemy was being held in check, General Stuart arrived with the cavalry, which had performed valuable service in guarding the flanks of the army during the retrograde movement, and after a short engagement drove him from the field.

The rains that had prevailed almost without intermission since our entrance into Maryland, and greatly interfered with our movements, had made the Potomac unfordable, and the pontoon bridge left at Falling Waters had been partially destroyed by the enemy. The wounded and prisoners were sent over the river as rapidly as possible in a few ferry boats, while the trains awaited the subsiding of the waters and the construction of a new pontoon bridge.

On the 8th July the enemy's cavalry advanced towards Hagerstown, but was repulsed by General Stuart, and pursued as far as Boonsboro'. With this exception, nothing but occasional skirmishing occurred until the 12th, when the main body of the enemy arrived. The army then took a position previously selected, covering the Potomac from Williamsport to Falling Waters, where it remained for two days with the enemy immediately in front, manifesting no disposition to attack, but throwing up entrenchments along his whole line.

By the 13th the river at Williamsport, though still deep, was fordable, and a good bridge was completed at Falling Waters, new boats having been constructed, and some of the old recovered. As further delay would enable the enemy to obtain reinforcements, and as it was found difficult to procure a sufficient supply of flour for the troops, the working of the mills being interrupted by high water, it was determined to await an attack no longer. Orders were

accordingly given to cross the Potomac that night Ewell's corps by the ford at Williamsport, and those of Longstreet and Hill on the bridge. The cavalry was directed to relieve the infantry skirmishers and bring up the rear. The movement was much retarded by a severe rain storm, and the darkness of the night. Ewell's corps, having the advantage of a turnpike road, marched with less difficulty, and crossed the river by 8 o'clock the following morning.

The condition of the road to the bridge, and the time consumed in the passage of the artillery, ammunition wagons and ambulances, which could not ford the river, so much delayed the progress of Longstreet and Hill, that it was daylight before their troops began to cross. Heth's division was halted about a mile and a half from the bridge to protect the passage of the column. No interruption was offered by the enemy until about 11 A. M. when his cavalry supported by artillery appeared in front of General Heth. A small number in advance of the main body was mistaken for our own cavalry retiring, no notice having been given of the withdrawal of the latter, and was suffered to approach our lines. They were immediately destroyed or captured with the exception of two or three, but Brigadier General Pettigrew, an Officer of great merit and promise, was mortally wounded in the encounter. He survived his removal to Virginia only a few days. The bridge being clear, General Heth began to withdraw. The enemy advanced, but his efforts to break our lines were repulsed, and the passage of the river was completed by one P. M. Owing to the extent of General Heth's line, some of his men most remote from the bridge were cut off before they could reach it, but the greater part of those taken by the enemy during the movement, supposed to amount in all to about five hundred, consisted of men from various commands, who lingered behind overcome by previous labors and hardships, and the fatigues of a most trying night march. There was no loss of material except a few broken wagons, and two pieces of artillery which the horses were unable to draw through the deep mud. Other horses were sent back for them, but the rear of the column had passed before their arrival.

The army proceeded to the vicinity of Bunker Hill and Darksville, when it halted to afford the troops repose.

The enemy made no effort to follow, except with his cavalry, which crossed the Potomac at Harper's Ferry, and advanced towards Martinsburg on the 16th July. They were attacked by General Fitz. Lee with his own and Chambliss' brigades, and driven back with loss.

When the army returned to Virginia, it was intended to move into Loudoun, but the Shenandoah was found to be impassable. While waiting for it to subside, the enemy crossed the Potomac east of the Blue Ridge, and seized the passes we designed to use. As he continued to advance along the eastern slope, apparently with the purpose of cutting us off from the railroad to Richmond, General Longstreet was ordered on the 19th July, to proceed to Culpeper Courthouse by the way of Front Royal. He succeeded in passing part of his command over the Shenandoah in time to prevent the occupation of Manassas and Chester Gaps by the enemy, whose cavalry had already made its appearance. As soon as a pontoon bridge could be laid down, the rest of his corps crossed the river, and marched through Chester Gap to Culpeper Courthouse, where it arrived on the 24th. He was followed by General A. P. Hill without serious opposition.

General Ewell having been detained in the Valley by an effort to capture a force of the enemy guarding the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad west of Martinsburg, Wright's brigade was left to hold Manassas Gap until his arrival. He reached Front Royal on the 23d with Johnson's and Rodes' divisions, Early's being near Winchester, and found General Wright skirmishing with the enemy's infantry, which had already appeared in Manassas Gap. General Ewell supported Wright with Rodes' division, and some artillery, and the enemy was held in check.

Finding that the Federal force greatly exceeded his own, General Ewell marched through Thornton's Gap and ordered Early to move up the Valley by Strasburg and New Market. He encamped near Madison Courthouse on the 29th July.

The enemy massed his army in the vicinity of Warrenton, and in the night of the 31st July his cavalry, with a large supporting force of infantry, crossed the Rappahannock at Rappahannock Station and Kelley's Ford. The next day they advanced towards Brandy Station, their progress being gallantly resisted by General Stuart, with Hampton's brigade, commanded by Colonel Baker, who fell back gradually to our lines about two miles south of Brandy. Our infantry skirmishers advanced and drove the enemy beyond Brandy Station.

It was now determined to place the army in a position to enable it more readily to oppose the enemy should he attempt to move southward, that near Culpeper Courthouse being one that he could easily avoid. Longstreet and Hill were put in motion on the 3d August, leaving the cavalry at Culpeper. Ewell had been previously ordered from Madison, and by the 4th the army occupied the line of the Rapidan.

The highest praise is due to both officers and men for their conduct during the campaign.

The privations and hardships of the march and camp were cheerfully encountered and borne with fortitude unsurpassed by our ancestors in their struggle for independence, while their courage in battle entitles them to rank with the soldiers of any army and of any time. Their forbearance and discipline, under strong provocation to retaliate for the cruelty of the enemy to our own citizens, is not their least claim to the respect and admiration of their countrymen and of the world.

I forward returns of our loss in killed, wounded and missing. Many of the latter were killed or wounded in the several assaults at Gettysburg and necessarily left in the hands of the enemy.

I cannot speak of these brave men as their merits and exploits deserve. Some of them are appropriately mentioned in the accompanying reports, and the memory of all will be gratefully and affectionately cherished by the people in whose defence they fell.

The loss of Major-General Pender is severely felt by the army and the country. He served with this army from the beginning of the war and took a distinguished part in all its engagements. Wounded on several occasions, he never left his command in action until he received the injury that resulted in his death. His promise and usefulness as an officer were only equalled by the purity and excellence of his private life.

Brigadier-Generals Armistead, Barksdale, Garnett and Semmes died as they had lived, discharging the highest duty of patriots with devotion that never faltered and courage that shrank from no danger.

I earnestly commend to the attention of the Government those gallant officers and men whose conduct merited the special commendation of their superiors, but whose names I am unable to mention in this report.

The officers of the general staff of the army were unremittingly engaged in the duties of their respective departments. Much depended on their management and exertion. The labors of the Quartermaster, Commissary and Medical Departments were more than usually severe. The Inspectors-General were also laboriously occupied in their attention to the troops, both on the march and in camp, and the officers of engineers showed skill and judgment in expediting the passage of rivers and streams, the swollen condition of which, by almost continuous rains, called for extraordinary exertion. The Chief of Ordnance and his assistants are entitled to praise for the care and watchfulness given to the ordnance trains and ammunition of the army, which in a long march and in many conflicts were always at hand and accessible to the troops. My thanks are due to my personal staff for the constant aid afforded me at all times on the march and in the field, and their willing discharge of every duty.

There were captured at Gettysburg nearly seven thousand prisoners, of whom about fifteen hundred were paroled, and the remainder brought to Virginia. Seven pieces of artillery were also secured.

I forward herewith the reports of the corps, division and other commanders, mentioned in the accompanying schedule, together with maps of the scene of operations, and one showing the routes pursued by the army.

Respectfully submitted,  
(Signed)

R. E. Lee, General.

# Report of Maj. Gen. J. E. B. Stuart, C. S. Army, Commanding Cavalry, Army of Northern Virginia. Battle of Gettysburg

HDQRS. CAVALRY DIVISION, ARMY OF NORTHERN VIRGINIA,  
August 20, 1863.

Col. R. H. CHILTON,  
Chief of Staff, Army of Northern Virginia.

General: I have the honor to make the following report of the operations of the Cavalry Division, Army of Northern Virginia, from the time of crossing the Rappahannock on June 16, to July 24, when, having recrossed the Blue Ridge after the Pennsylvania campaign, our pickets were re-established on the south bank of the Rappahannock:

After holding in check a cavalry force at least double our own for months, with a command stretched on the outposts from the Blue Ridge to the Chesapeake, engaging in numerous hand-to-hand encounters, illustrating the superiority of southern cavalry, it was with joy that the order of the commanding general to advance was received by the cavalry. I was instructed by the commanding general to leave a sufficient force on the Rappahannock to watch the enemy in front, and move the main body parallel to the Blue Ridge and on Longstreet's right flank, who was to move near the base of the mountains, through Fauquier and Loudoun Counties.

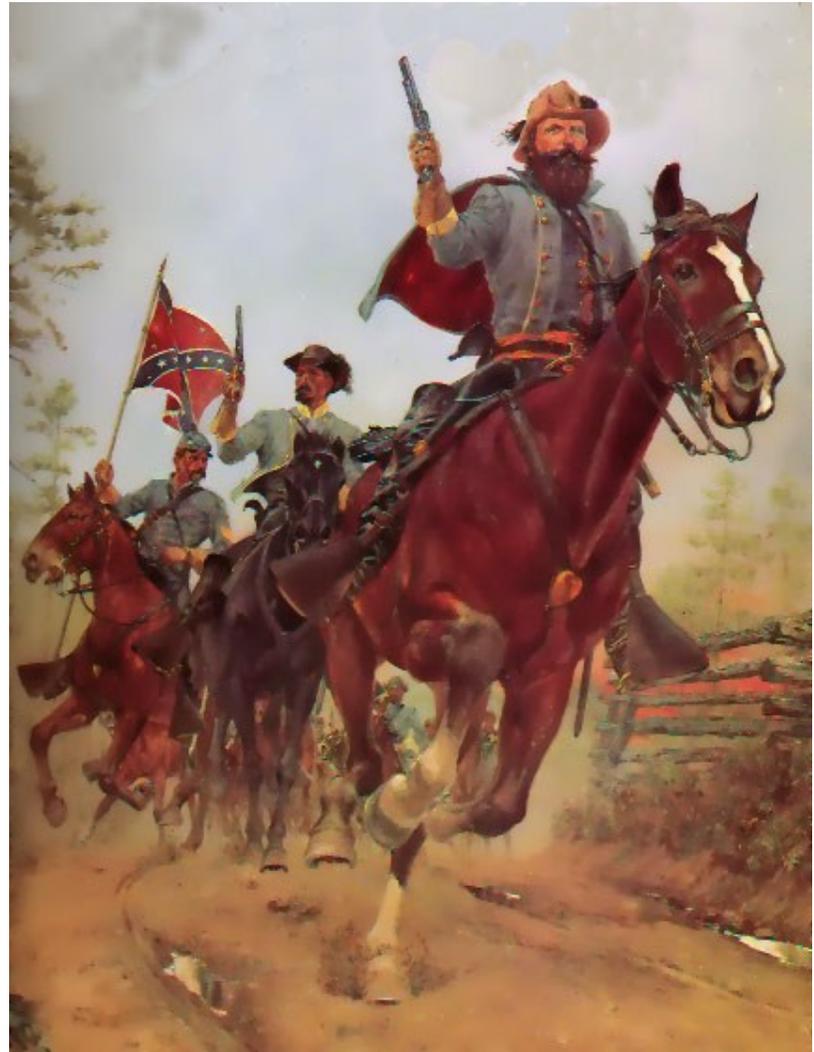
The position of the enemy as far as known was as follows: His cavalry massed in Fauquier, principally from Warrenton Springs to Catlett's Station, with the Twelfth Corps and other infantry supports, the main body of Hooker's army being in Stafford and Lower Fauquier, hastening to interpose itself between our main body and Washington, with a corps or two confronting A. P.

Hill's corps at Fredericksburg, having made a lodgment on the south side of the river there, near the mouth of Deep Run.

I accordingly left the Fifteenth Virginia Cavalry (Major [C. R.] Collins), W. H. F. Lee's brigade, on the Lower Rappahannock, cooperating with A. P. Hill, and directed Brigadier-General Hampton to remain with his brigade on the Rappahannock, in observation of the enemy during the movement of our forces, and directed also Fitz. Lee's brigade (Col. T. T. Munford temporarily in command) to cross on the morning of the 15th at Rockford, and take the advance of Longstreet's column, via Barbee's Cross-Roads, and put Robertson's and W. H. F. Lee's brigades en route to cross the Rappahannock lower down (at Hinson's Mills), while Jones' brigade followed, with orders to picket the Aestham River the first day.

The movement was not interrupted the enemy having disappeared from our front during the night, and our march continued to within a few miles of Salem, to bivouac for the night. Scouting parties were sent to Warrenton, where it was ascertained the enemy had withdrawn his forces to Centreville the day previous.

General Fitz. Lee's brigade, having encamped near Piedmont, moved on the morning of the 17th (Wednesday), by my direction, toward Aldie, via Middleburg, with the view, if possible, to hold the gap in Bull Run Mountain as a screen to Longstreet's movements. W. H. F. Lee's brigade was kept near the plains, reconnoitering to Thoroughfare Gap, while Robertson's brigade was halted near Rectortown, to move to the support of either.



I accompanied Fitz. Lee's brigade as far as Middleburg, where I remained to close up the command, and keep in more ready communication with the rear. The brigade, moving to Aldie, being much worn and the horses having had very little food, was halted by its commander near Dover, to close up, and pickets sent forward to the Aldie Gap. These pickets were soon attacked by the enemy's cavalry, advancing from the direction of Fairfax, and were driven back on the main body, which took a position just west of Aldie, on a hill commanding the Snickersville road, but which was liable to be turned by the road to Middleburg.

Simultaneously with this attack, I was informed that a large force of the enemy's cavalry was advancing on Middleburg from the direction of Hopewell. Having only a few pickets and my staff here, I sent orders to Munford to look out for the road to Middleburg, as by the time my dispatch reached him the enemy would be in the place, and retiring myself toward Rector's Cross-Roads, I sent orders for Robertson to march without delay for Middleburg, and Chambliss to take the Salem road to the same place.

At Aldie ensued one of the most sanguinary cavalry battles of the war, and at the same time most creditable to our arms and glorious to the veteran brigade of Brig. Gen. Fitz. Lee. They fought most successfully, punishing the enemy with great severity, and maintaining their position till the dispatch received from me made it necessary to move farther back, on account of the threatening attitude of the force at Middleburg. This brigade captured 134 prisoners, among whom were a colonel and captain, several stand of colors, together with horses, arms, and equipments. A large number of the enemy's dead, including a colonel, were left on the field.

Brigadier-General Robertson arrived at Middleburg just at dark. I ordered him to attack the enemy at once, and, with his two regiments, he drove him handsomely out of the place, and pursued him miles on the Hopewell road, the force appearing to scatter. He captured a standard and 70 prisoners.

Chambliss' brigade, approaching from that direction, caught that night and early next morning 160 and several guidons, the colonel and a small detachment only escaping. It was the First Rhode Island Cavalry. Horses, arms, and equipments were captured in proportion. Among the captured were included a number of officers.

Our own loss in Robertson's brigade was slight, excepting Major [James H.] McNeill, Sixty-third [Fifth] North Carolina Cavalry, whose wound deprived us of the services of a most valuable officer, and Lieutenant-Colonel [Edward] Cantwell, Fifty-ninth North Carolina troops [Fourth North Carolina Cavalry], captured.

Major Heros von Borcke, of my staff, being sent by me with the attacking column, behaved with his usual fine judgment and distinguished gallantry. Our loss in Fitz. Lee's brigade was heavier, as the fighting was more desperate and continued. His report, which I hope to forward with this, will state the casualties.

We occupied Middleburg that night, and on the 18th took position around the place with Robertson's and W. H. F. Lee's brigades, and directed Fitz. Lee's brigade to take position at Union, on my left, while Jones' brigade was expected to arrive that day.

The enemy soon made such encroachments on our left that I deemed it requisite to leave Middleburg out of my line of battle, keeping pickets, however, close to the enemy. Slight skirmishing continued.

A general engagement of cavalry was not sought by me, because I preferred waiting for the arrival of the cavalry still in rear (Jones' and Hampton's brigades), and I confined my attention to procuring, through scouts and reconnoitering parties, information of the enemy's movements.

In one of these, Major Mosby, with his usual daring, penetrated the enemy's lines, and caught a staff officer of General Hooker, bearer of dispatches to General Pleasonton, commanding United States cavalry near Aldie. These dispatches disclosed the fact that Hooker was looking to Aldie with solicitude; that Pleasonton, with infantry and cavalry, occupied the place, and that a reconnaissance in force, of cavalry, was meditated toward Warrenton and Culpeper.

I immediately dispatched to General Hampton, who was coming by way of Warrenton from the direction of Beverly Ford, this intelligence, and directed him to meet this advance at Warrenton. The captured dispatches also gave the entire number of divisions, from which we could estimate the approximate strength of the enemy's army. I therefore concluded in no event to attack with cavalry alone the enemy at Aldie. As long as he kept within supporting distance of his infantry at that point, my operations became necessarily defensive, but masking thereby the movement of our main body by checking the enemy's reconnaissance and by continually threatening attack. Hampton met the enemy's advance toward Culpeper, at Warrenton, and drove him back without difficulty, a heavy storm and night intervening to aid the enemy's retreat.

On the 19th, the enemy showed signs of an advance, and our pickets beyond Middleburg were driven back upon the main body, composed of Robertson's and W. H. F. Lee's brigades, posted far enough west of the place not to bring it under fire. The enemy, with a large force of cavalry, advanced, attacking with dismounted men deployed as infantry. This attack was met in the most determined manner by these two brigades, which rough roads had already decimated

for want of adequate shoeing facilities, Chambliss commanding Lee's brigade upon the left and Robertson's on the right. Brig. Gen. Fitz. Lee's brigade in the meantime was occupied with the enemy on the Snickersville turnpike, opposite us. The enemy finally gained possession of a woodland in front of our line of battle, and while our brave men met and repelled every attempt to advance from it, yet our charges invariably brought us under a severe carbine fire from these woods, as well as a fire from the artillery beyond.

Appreciating this difficulty, I withdrew my command to a more commanding position a half mile to the rear, where we possessed every advantage, and could more readily debouch for attack. In withdrawing, while riding at my side, the brave and heroic Major von Borcke received a very severe, and it was thought fatal, wound in the neck from one of the enemy's sharpshooters, who, from a stone fence a few hundred yards off, poured a tempest of bullets over us. I will not pause here to record the praise due this distinguished Prussian.

The enemy did not attack our new position on the 19th. Jones' brigade came up on the evening of the 19th, and was ordered to the left, near Union, General Fitz. Lee's brigade being farther to the left, looking out for Snicker's Gap and the Snickersville pike.

Hampton's brigade arrived on the 20th, too late to attack the enemy, still in possession of Middleburg. A continuous rain was also an obstacle to military operations. Skirmishing, however, continued principally on our left, beyond Goose Creek, where Colonel Rosser, with his regiment (Fifth Virginia Cavalry), attacked and drove the enemy's force across the stream in handsome style. He was supported by Brigadier-General Jones with a portion of his brigade.

I was extremely anxious now to attack the enemy as early as possible, having, since Hampton's arrival, received sufficient re-enforcement to attack the enemy's cavalry, but the next morning (21st) being the Sabbath, I recognized my obligation to do no duty other than what was absolutely necessary, and determined, so far as was in my power, to devote it to rest. Not so the enemy, whose guns about 8 a.m. showed that he would not observe it. Had I attacked the enemy, I would have encountered, besides his cavalry, a heavy force of infantry and artillery, and the result would have been disastrous, no doubt.

Hampton's and Robertson's brigades were moved to the front to a position previously chosen, of great strength against a force of ordinary size, or against cavalry alone; but although the enemy's advance was held in check gallantly and decidedly for a long time, it soon became evident that the enemy, utterly foiled for days in his attempt to force our lines, had, as usual, brought a heavy infantry force--part of the Fifth Corps, under General Vincent--to his support, and its advance was already engaged in conjunction with the cavalry.

I therefore directed General Hampton to withdraw to the next height whenever his position was hard pressed, and sent orders at once to Colonel Chambliss and General Jones--the former having informed me that the enemy was advancing in heavy force in his front--to afford all the resistance possible, and General Jones to join to his left, and, retiring apace with the main body, to effect a junction with it at Upperville, where I proposed to make a more determined stand than was compatible with our forces divided. The commands were from 4 to 6 miles apart.

In retiring from the first position before Middleburg, one of the pieces of Captain [J. F.] Hart's battery of horse artillery had the axle broken by one of the enemy's shot, and the piece had to be abandoned, which is the first piece of my horse artillery which has ever fallen into the enemy's hands. Its full value was paid in the slaughter it made in the enemy's ranks, and it was well sold.

The next position was on the west bank of Goose Creek, whence, after receiving the enemy's attack, and after repulsing him with slaughter, I again withdrew en échelon of regiments in plain view, and under fire of the enemy's guns. Nothing could exceed the coolness and self-possession of officers and men in these movements, performing evolutions with a precision under fire that must have wrung the tribute of admiration from the enemy, even, who dared not trust his cavalry unsupported to the sabers of such men.

In the meantime, Jones' and W. H. F. Lee's brigades were hotly engaged with another column of the enemy moving parallel to this, and were gradually retiring toward Upperville, before reaching which point, however, the enemy had pressed closely up, so as to render an attempt to effect a junction at Upperville hazardous to those brigades, and also made it necessary for Hampton's and Robertson's brigades to move at once to the west side of Upperville, on account of the number of roads concentrating at that point, so as to favor the enemy's flank movements.

I was anxious on account of the women and children to avoid a conflict in the village, but the enemy, true to those reckless and inhuman instincts, sought to take advantage of this disinclination on our part, by attacking furiously our rear guard. In an instant, the same men who had with so much coolness retired before the enemy, wheeled about, and with admirable spirit drove back the enemy, killing, wounding, and capturing a large number. In this, General Hampton's brigade participated largely and in a brilliant manner. His report, not yet sent in, will no doubt give full particulars.

After this repulse, which was not followed up, as the enemy's infantry was known to be in close supporting distance, I withdrew the command leisurely to the mountain gap west of Upperville.

The enemy attacked Brigadier-General Robertson, bringing up the rear in this movement, and was handsomely repulsed. The brave and efficient Colonel [P. G.] Evans, of the Sixty-third North Carolina troops, was, however, severely, and it was feared fatally, wounded, his body falling into the hands of the enemy.

Jones' and W. H. F. Lee's brigades joined the main body near the gap, and positions were taken to dispute any farther advance. The day was far spent. The enemy did not attack the gap, but appeared to go into camp at Upperville. In the conflicts on the left, the enemy was roughly handled. Lieutenant-Colonel [M.] Lewis, Ninth Virginia Cavalry, was very severely, and it was believed fatally, wounded, and left in the hands of the enemy. The reports of brigade commanders will show further details of these encounters.

Fitz. Lee's brigade being before Snicker's Gap, did not participate in these operations. By night, part of Longstreet's corps occupied the mountain pass, and the cavalry was ordered farther back for rest and refreshment, of which it was sorely in need, leaving ample pickets in front and on either flank.

When the mist had sufficiently cleared away next morning, it was evident the enemy was retiring, and the cavalry was ordered up immediately to the front, to follow. The enemy was pursued to within a short distance of Aldie, and a number captured. Colonel Rosser, Fifth Virginia Cavalry, having been sent across from Snickersville early to reconnoiter, contributed very materially to the vigor of this pursuit. Major [John] Eells, of his regiment, a gallant and meritorious officer, was killed in a charge upon the enemy near Goose Creek Bridge. Our lines were much farther advanced than before, and Monday, the 22d, was consumed in their re-establishment.

Our loss in these operations was 65 killed, 279 wounded, and 166 missing. I resumed my own position at Rector's Cross-Roads, and, being in constant communication with the commanding general, had scouts busily engaged watching and reporting the enemy's movements, and reporting the same to the commanding general. In this difficult search, the fearless and indefatigable Major Mosby was particularly active and efficient. His information was always accurate and reliable.

The enemy retained one army corps (Fifth) at Aldie, and kept his cavalry near enough to make attack upon the latter productive of no solid benefits, and I began to look for some other point at which to direct an effective blow. I submitted to the commanding general the plan of leaving a brigade or so in my present front, and passing through Hopewell or some other gap in Bull Run Mountains, attain the enemy's rear, passing between his main body and Washington, and cross into Maryland, joining our army north of the Potomac. The commanding general wrote me, authorizing this move if I deemed it practicable, -and also what instructions should be given the officer in command of the two brigades left in front of the enemy. He also notified me that one column should move via Gettysburg and the other via Carlisle, toward the Susquehanna, and directed me, after crossing, to proceed with all dispatch to join the right (Early) of the army in Pennsylvania.

Accordingly, three days' rations were prepared, and, on the night of the 24th, the following brigades, Hampton's, Fitz. Lee's, and W. H. F. Lee's, rendezvoused secretly near Salem Depot. We had no wagons or vehicles excepting six pieces of artillery and caissons and ambulances. Robertson's and Jones' brigades, under command of the former, were left in observation of the enemy on the usual front, with full instructions as to following up the enemy in case of withdrawal, and rejoining our main army. Brig. Gen. Fitz. Lee's brigade had to march from north of Snicker's Gap to the place of rendezvous. This brigade was now for the first time for a month under the command of its noble brigadier, who, writhing under a painful attack of inflammatory rheumatism, nevertheless kept with his command until now.

At 1 o'clock at night, the brigades with noiseless march moved out. This precaution was necessary on account of the enemy's having possession of Bull Run Mountains, which in the daytime commanded a view of every movement of consequence in that region. Hancock's corps occupied Thoroughfare Gap. Moving to the right, we passed through Glasscock's Gap without serious difficulty, and marched for Hay Market. I had previously sent Major Mosby with some picked men through, to gain the vicinity of Dranesville, find where a crossing was practicable, and bring intelligence to me near Gum Springs to-day (25th).

As we neared Hay Market, we found that Hancock's corps was en route through Hay Market for Gum Springs, his infantry well distributed through Iris trains. I chose a good position, and opened with artillery on his passing column with effect, scattering men, wagons, and horses in wild confusion; disabled one of the enemy's caissons, which he abandoned, and compelled him to advance in order of battle to compel us to desist.

As Hancock had the right of way on my road, I sent Fitz. Lee's brigade to Gainesville to reconnoiter, and devoted the remainder of the day to grazing our horses, the only forage procurable in the country. The best of our information represented the enemy still at Centreville, Union Mills, and Wolf Run Shoals. I sent a dispatch to General Lee concerning

Hancock's movement, and moved back to Buckland, to deceive the enemy. It rained heavily that night. To carry out my original design of passing west of Centreville, would have involved so much detention, on account of the presence of the enemy, that I determined to cross Bull Run lower down, and strike through Fairfax for the Potomac the next day. The sequel shows this to have been the only practicable course. We marched through Brentsville to the vicinity of Wolf Run Shoals, and had to halt again in order to graze our horses, which hard marching without grain was fast breaking down. We met no enemy to-day (26th).

On the following morning (27th), having ascertained that on the night previous the enemy had disappeared entirely from Wolf Run Shoals, a strongly fortified position on the Occoquan, I marched to that point, and thence directly for Fairfax Station, sending General Fitz. Lee to the right, to cross by Burke's Station and effect a junction at Fairfax Court-House, or farther on, according to circumstances. Fairfax Station had been evacuated the previous day, but near this point General Hampton's advance regiment had a spirited encounter with and chase after a detachment of Federal cavalry denominated Scott's Nine Hundred, killing, wounding, and capturing the greater portion, among them several officers; also horses, arms, and equipments. The First North Carolina Cavalry lost its major in the first onset--Major [John H.] Whitaker--an officer of distinction and great value to us.

Reaching Fairfax Court-House, a communication was received from Brig. Gen. Fitz. Lee at Annandale. At these two points, there were evidences of very recent occupation, but the information was conclusive that the enemy had left this front entirely, the mobilized army having the day previous moved over toward Leesburg, while the local had retired to the fortifications near Washington. I had not heard yet from Major Mosby, but the indications favored my successful passage in rear of the enemy's army. After a halt of a few hours to rest and refresh the command, which regaled itself on the stores left by the enemy in the place, the march was resumed for Dranesville, which point was reached late in the afternoon. The camp-fires of Sedgwick's (Sixth) corps, just west of the town, were still burning, it having left that morning, and several of his stragglers were caught. General Hampton's brigade was still in advance, and was ordered to move directly for Rowser's Ford, on the Potomac, Chambliss' brigade being held at Dranesville till Brig. Gen. Fitz. Lee could close up.

As General Hampton approached the river, he fortunately met a citizen who had just forded the river, who informed us there were no pickets on the other side, and that the river was fordable, though 2 feet higher than usual. Hampton's brigade crossed early in the night, but reported to me that it would be utterly impossible to cross the artillery at that ford. In this the residents were also very positive, that vehicles could not cross. A ford lower down was examined, and found quite as impracticable from quicksand, rocks, and rugged banks. I, however, determined not to give it up without trial, and before 12 o'clock that night, in spite of the difficulties, to all appearances insuperable, indomitable energy and resolute determination triumphed; every piece was brought safely over, and the entire command in bivouac on Maryland soil. In this success the horse artillery displayed the same untiring zeal in their laborious toil through mud and water which has distinguished its members in battle.

The canal, which was now the supplying medium of Hooker's army, soon received our attention. A lock-gate was broken, and steps taken to intercept boats. At least a dozen were intercepted, and the next morning several loaded with troops, negroes, and stores were captured by Colonel Wickham, Fourth Virginia Cavalry, commanding rear guard. I ascertained that Hooker was on the day previous at Poolesville, and his army in motion for Frederick.

I realized the importance of joining our army in Pennsylvania, and resumed the march northward early on the 28th. General Hampton was sent by Darnestown to Rockville, and the other brigades took the direct route to the same place. General Hampton encountered small parties of the enemy, which, with a number of wagons and teams, he captured, and reached Rockville in advance of the main body. The advance guard of W. H. F. Lee's brigade had a running fight with the Second New York Cavalry, but the speed of their horses deprived us of the usual results in captures. At Rockville, General Hampton encountered what he believed to be a large force of the enemy, and, moving up W. H. F. Lee's brigade quickly to his assistance, I found that the enemy had already disappeared, having retreated toward the Great Falls.

Rockville was speedily taken possession of. This place is situated on the direct wagon road from Washington City to Hooker's army, and, consequently, on his route of communication with Washington after crossing the Potomac. The telegraph line along it was torn down for miles.

Soon after taking possession, a long train of wagons approached from the direction of Washington, apparently but slightly guarded. As soon as our presence was known to those in charge, they attempted to turn the wagons, and at full speed to escape, but the leading brigade (W. H. F. Lee's) was sent in pursuit. The farthest wagon was within only 3 or 4 miles of Washington City, the train being about 8 miles long. Not one escaped, though many were upset and broken, so as to require their being burned. More than one hundred and twenty-five best United States model wagons and

splendid teams with gay caparisons were secured and driven off. The mules and harness of the broken wagons were also secured.

The capture and securing of this train had for the time scattered the leading brigade. I calculated that before the next brigade could march this distance and reach the defenses of Washington, it would be after dark; the troops there would have had time to march to position to meet attack on this road. To attack at night with cavalry, particularly unless certain of surprise, would have been extremely hazardous; to wait till morning, would have lost much time from my march to join General Lee, without the probability of compensating results. I therefore determined, after getting the wagons under way, to proceed directly north, so as to cut the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad (now becoming the enemy's main war artery) that night. I found myself now encumbered by about 400 prisoners, many of whom were officers. I paroled nearly all at Brookeville that night, and the remainder next day at Cooksville. Among the number, were Major [James C.] Duane and Captain [Nathaniel] Michler, Engineers, U.S. Army.

At Cooksville, our advance encountered and put to flight a small party of the enemy, and among the prisoners taken there were some who said they belonged to the "Seven Hundred Loyal Eastern Shoremen."

Brig. Gen. Fitz. Lee reached the railroad soon after daylight, the march having continued all night. The bridge at Sykesville was burned, and the track torn up at Hood's Mills, where the main body crossed it. Measures were taken to intercept trains, but trains ran to the vicinity of the obstruction, took the alarm, and ran back. The various telegraph lines were likewise cut, and communications of the enemy with Washington City thus cut off at every point, and Baltimore threatened. We remained in possession of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad nearly all day.

The enemy was ascertained to be moving through Frederick City northward, and it was important for me to reach our column with as little delay as possible, to acquaint the commanding general with the nature of the enemy's movements, as well as to place with his column my cavalry force. The head of the column, following a ridge road, reached Westminster about 5 p.m. At this place, our advance was obstinately disputed for a short time by a squadron of the First Delaware Cavalry, but what were not killed were either captured or saved themselves by precipitate flight. In this brief engagement, 2 officers of the Fourth Virginia Cavalry (Lieuts. Pierre Gibson and [John W.] Murray) were killed. Gallant and meritorious, they were noble sacrifices to the cause. The ladies of the place begged to be allowed to superintend their interment, and, in accordance with their wishes, the bodies of these young heroes were left in their charge. The fugitives were pursued a long distance on the Baltimore road, and I afterward heard created a great panic in that city, impressing the authorities with the belief that we were just at their heels. Here, for the first time since leaving Rector's Cross-Roads, we obtained a full supply of forage, but the delay and difficulty of procuring it kept many of the men up all night. Several flags and one piece of artillery without a carriage were captured here. The latter was spiked and left behind. We encamped for the night a few miles beyond the town (Fitz. Lee's brigade in advance), halting the head of the column at Union Mills, midway between Westminster and Littlestown, on the Gettysburg road. It was ascertained here that night by scouts that the enemy's cavalry had reached Littlestown during the night, and encamped.

Early next morning (June 30), we resumed the march direct by a cross route for Hanover, Pa., W. H. F. Lee's brigade in advance, Hampton in rear of the wagon train, and Fitz. Lee's brigade moving on the left flank, between Littlestown and our road.

About 10 a.m. the head of the column reached Hanover, and found a large column of cavalry passing through, going toward the gap of the mountains which I intended using. The enemy soon discovered our approach, and made a demonstration toward attacking us, which was promptly met by a gallant charge by Chambliss' leading regiment, which not only repulsed the enemy, but drove him pell-mell through the town with half his numbers, capturing his ambulances and a large number of prisoners, all of which were brought, safely through to our train, but were closely followed by the enemy's fresh troops. If my command had been well closed now, this cavalry column, which we had struck near its rear, would have been at our mercy; but, owing to the great elongation of the column by reason of the 200 wagons and hilly roads, Hampton was a long way behind, and Lee was not yet heard from on the left.

In retiring with the prisoners and ambulances, Lieut. Col. W. H. Payne, Fourth Virginia Cavalry, temporarily in command of the Second North Carolina Cavalry, was taken prisoner, in a gallant attempt to cut off a body of the enemy by a flank movement on the town.

The delay in getting up re-enforcements enabled the enemy to regain possession of the town, by no means desirable for us to hold, as it was in a valley completely commanded by the heights in our possession, which were soon crowned by our artillery. Our position was impregnable to cavalry even with so small a force. We cut the enemy's column in twain. General Fitz. Lee in the meantime fell upon the rear portion, driving it handsomely, and capturing one of Kilpatrick's staff and many other prisoners.

Our wagon train was now a subject of serious embarrassment, but I thought, by making a détour to the right by Jefferson, I could save it. I therefore determined to try it, particularly as I was satisfied, from every accessible source of information, as well as from the lapse of time, that the Army of Northern Virginia must be near the Susquehanna. My numerous skirmishers had greatly diminished--almost exhausted--my supply of ammunition. I had this immense train in an enemy's country, very near a hostile army, and, besides, about 400 prisoners, which had accumulated since the paroling at Cooksville. I therefore had the train closed up in park, and Hampton, arriving in the meantime, engaged the enemy farther to the right, and finally, with his sharpshooters, dislodged the enemy from the town, the enemy moving toward our left apparently to reunite his broken column, but pressing us with dismounted men on our left flank. General Fitz. Lee's brigade was put at the head of the column, and he was instructed to push on with the train through Jefferson for York, Pa. and communicate as soon as practicable with our forces. Hampton's brigade brought up the rear.

We were not molested in our march, which, on account of the very exposed situation of our flank and the enemy's knowledge of it, was continued during the night. The night's march over a very dark road was one of peculiar hardship, owing to loss of rest to both man and horse. After a series of exciting combats and night marches, it was a severe tax to their endurance. Whole regiments slept in the saddle, their faithful animals keeping the road unguided. In some instances they fell from their horses, overcome with physical fatigue and sleepiness.

Reaching Dover, Pa., on the morning of July 1, I was unable to find our forces. The most I could learn was that General Early had marched his division in the direction of Shippensburg, which the best information I could get seemed to indicate as the point of concentration of our troops. After as little rest as was compatible with the exhausted condition of the command, we pushed on for Carlisle, where we hoped to find a portion of the army. I arrived before that village, by way of Dillsburg, in the afternoon. Our rations were entirely out. I desired to levy a contribution on the inhabitants for rations, but was informed before reaching it that it was held by a considerable force of militia (infantry and artillery), who were concealed in the buildings, with the view to entrap me upon my entrance into the town. They were frustrated in their intention, and although very peaceable in external aspect, I soon found the information I had received was correct. I disliked to subject the town to the consequences of attack; at the same time it was essential to us to procure rations. I therefore directed General Lee to send in a flag of truce, demanding unconditional surrender or bombardment. This was refused. I placed artillery in position commanding the town, took possession of the main avenues to the place, and repeated the demand. It was again refused, and I was forced to the alternative of shelling the place.

Although the houses were used by their sharpshooters while firing on our men, not a building was fired excepting the United States cavalry barracks, which were burned by my order, the place having resisted my advance instead of peaceable surrender, as in the case of General Ewell. General Fitz. Lee's brigade was charged with the duty of investing the place, the remaining brigades following at considerable intervals from Dover. Maj. Gen. W. F. Smith was in command of the forces in Carlisle. The only obstacle to the enforcement of my threat was the scarcity of artillery ammunition.

The whereabouts of our army was still a mystery; but, during the night, I received a dispatch from General Lee (in answer to one sent by Major Venable from Dover, on Early's trail), that the army was at Gettysburg, and had been engaged on this day (July 1) with the enemy's advance. I instantly dispatched to Hampton to move 10 miles that night on the road to Gettysburg, and gave orders to the other brigades, with a view to reaching Gettysburg early the next day, and started myself that night.

My advance reached Gettysburg July 2, just in time to thwart a move of the enemy's cavalry upon our rear by way of Hunterstown. After a fierce engagement, in which Hampton's brigade performed gallant service, a series of charges compelling the enemy to leave the field and abandon his purpose. I took my position that day on the York and Heidlersburg roads, on the left wing of the Army of Northern Virginia.

On the morning of July 3, pursuant to instructions from the commanding general (the ground along our line of battle being totally impracticable for cavalry operations), I moved forward to a position to the left of General Ewell's left, and in advance of it, where a commanding ridge completely controlled a wide plain of cultivated fields stretching toward Hanover, on the left, and reaching to the base of the mountain spurs, among which the enemy held position. My command was increased by the addition of Jenkins' brigade, who here in the presence of the enemy allowed themselves to be supplied with but 10 rounds of ammunition, although armed with the most approved Enfield musket. I moved this command and W. H. F. Lee's secretly through the woods to a position, and hoped to effect a surprise upon the enemy's rear, but Hampton's and Fitz. Lee's brigades, which had been ordered to follow me, unfortunately debouched into the open ground, disclosing the movement, and causing a corresponding movement of a large force of the enemy's cavalry.

Having been informed that Generals Hampton and Lee were up, I sent for them to come forward, so that I could show them the situation at a glance from the elevated ground I held, and arrange for further operations. My message

was so long in finding General Hampton that he never reached me, and General Lee remained. as it was deemed inadvisable at the time the message was delivered for both to leave their commands.

Before General Hampton had reached where I was, the enemy had deployed a heavy line of sharpshooters, and were advancing toward our position, which was very strong. Our artillery had, however, left the crest, which it was essential for it to occupy on account of being of too short range to compete with the longer range guns of the enemy, but I sent orders for its return. Jenkins' brigade was chiefly employed dismounted, and fought with decided effect until the 10 rounds were expended, and then retreated, under circumstances of difficulty and exposure which entailed the loss of valuable men.

The left, where Hampton's and Lee's brigades were, by this time became heavily engaged as dismounted skirmishers. My plan was to employ the enemy in front with sharpshooters, and move a command of cavalry upon their left flank from the position lately held by me, but the falling back of Jenkins' men (that officer was wounded the day previous, before reporting to me, and his brigade was now commanded by Colonel [M. J.] Ferguson, Sixteenth Virginia Cavalry) caused a like movement of those on the left, and the enemy, sending forward a squadron or two, were about to cut off and capture a portion of our dismounted sharpshooters.

To prevent this, I ordered forward the nearest cavalry regiment (one of W. H. F. Lee's) quickly to charge this force of cavalry. It was gallantly done, and about the same time a portion of General Fitz. Lee's command charged on the left, the First Virginia Cavalry being most conspicuous. In these charges, the impetuosity of those gallant fellows, after two weeks of hard marching and hard fighting on short rations, was not only extraordinary, but irresistible. The enemy's masses vanished before them like grain before the scythe, and that regiment elicited the admiration of every beholder, and eclipsed the many laurels already won by its gallant veterans. Their impetuosity carried them too far, and the charge being very much prolonged, their horses, already jaded by hard marching, failed under it. Their movement was too rapid to be stopped by couriers, and the enemy perceiving it, were turning upon them with fresh horses. The First North Carolina Cavalry and Jeff. Davis Legion were sent to their support, and gradually this hand-to-hand fighting involved the greater portion of the command till the enemy were driven from the field, which was now raked by their artillery, posted about three-quarters of a mile off, our officers and men behaving with the greatest heroism throughout. Our own artillery commanding the same ground, no more hand-to-hand fighting occurred, but the wounded were removed and the prisoners (a large number) taken to the rear.

The enemy's loss was unmistakably heavy; numbers not known. Many of his killed and wounded fell into our hands. That brave and distinguished officer, Brigadier-General Hampton, was seriously wounded twice in this engagement. Among the killed was Major [W. G.] Conner, a gallant and efficient officer of the Jeff. Davis Legion. Several officers and many valuable men were killed and wounded whose names it is not now in my power to furnish, but which, it is hoped, will be ultimately furnished in the reports of regimental and brigade commanders.

Notwithstanding the favorable results obtained, I would have preferred a different method of attack, as already indicated; but I soon saw that entanglement by the force of circumstances narrated was unavoidable, and determined to make the best fight possible. General Fitz. Lee was always in the right place, and contributed his usual conspicuous share to the success of the day. Both he and the gallant First Virginia begged me (after the hot encounter) to allow them to take the enemy's battery, but I doubted the practicability of the ground for such a purpose.

During this day's operations, I held such a position as not only to render Ewell's left entirely secure, where the firing of my command, mistaken for that of the enemy, caused some apprehension, but commanded a view of the routes leading to the enemy's rear. Had the enemy's main body been dislodged, as was confidently hoped and expected, I was in precisely the right position to discover it and improve the opportunity. I watched keenly and anxiously the indications in his rear for that purpose, while in the attack which I intended (which was forestalled by our troops being exposed to view), his cavalry would have separated from the main body, and gave promise of solid results and advantages.

After dark, I directed a withdrawal to the York road, as our position was so far advanced as to make it hazardous at night, on account of the proximity of the enemy's infantry.

During the night of July 3, the commanding general withdrew the main body to the ridges west of Gettysburg, and sent word to me to that effect, but his messenger missed me. I repaired to his headquarters during the latter part of the night, and received instructions as to the new line, and sent, in compliance therewith, a brigade (Fitz. Lee's) to Cashtown, to protect our trains congregated there. My cavalry and artillery were somewhat jeopardized before I got back to my command by the enemy having occupied our late ground before my command could be notified of the change. None, however, were either lost or captured.

During the 4th, which was quite rainy, written instructions were received from the commanding general as to the order of march back to the Potomac, to be undertaken at nightfall. In this order two brigades of cavalry (Baker's and

Hampton's were ordered to move, as heretofore stated, by way of Cashtown, guarding that flank, bringing up the rear on the road, via Greenwood, to Williamsport, which was the route designated for the main portion of the wagon trains and ambulances, under the special charge of Brigadier General Imboden, who had a mixed command of artillery, infantry, and cavalry (his own).

Previous to these instructions, I had, at the instance of the commanding general, instructed Brigadier-General Robertson, whose two brigades (his own and Jones') were now on the right, near Fairfield, Pa., that it was essentially necessary for him to hold the Jack Mountain passes. These included two prominent roads-the one north and the other south of Jack Mountain, which is a sort of peak in the Blue Ridge chain.

In the order of march (retrograde), one corps (Hill's) preceded everything through the mountain; the baggage and prisoners of war escorted by another corps. Longstreet's occupied the center, and the third (Ewell's) brought up the rear. The cavalry was disposed of as follows Two brigades on the Cashtown road, under General Fitz. Lee, and the remainder (Jenkins' and Chambliss'), under my immediate command, was directed to proceed by way of Emmitsburg, Md., so as to guard the other flank.

I dispatched Captain [W. W.] Blackford, Corps of Engineers, to General Robertson, to inform him of my movement, and direct his co-operation, as Emmitsburg was in his immediate front, and was probably occupied by the enemy's cavalry. It was dark before I had passed the extreme right of our line, and, having to pass through very dense woods, taking by-roads, it soon became so dark that it was impossible to proceed. We were in danger of losing the command as well as the road. It was raining, also.

We halted for several hours, when, having received a good guide, and it becoming more light, the march was resumed, and just at dawn we entered Emmitsburg. We there learned that a large body of the enemy's cavalry (the citizens said 15,000, which I knew, of course, was exaggerated) had passed through that point the afternoon previous, going toward Monterey, one of the passes designated in my instructions to Brigadier-General Robertson.

I halted for a short time to procure some rations, and, examining my map, I saw that this force could either attempt to force one of those gaps, or, foiled in that (as I supposed they would be), it would either turn to the right and bear off toward Fairfield, where it would meet with like repulse from Hill's or Longstreet's corps, or, turning to the left before reaching Monterey, would strike across by Eyler's Gap, toward Hagerstown, and thus seriously threaten that portion of our trains which, under Imboden, would be passing down the Greencastle pike the next day, and interpose itself between the main body and its baggage. I did not consider that this force could seriously annoy any other portion of the command under the order of march prescribed, particularly as it was believed that those gaps would be held by General Robertson till he could be re-enforced by the main body. I therefore determined to adhere to my instructions, and proceed by way of Cavetown, by which I might intercept the enemy should he pass through Eyler's Gap.

In and around Emmitsburg we captured 60 or 70 prisoners of war, and some valuable hospital stores en route from Frederick to the army.

The march was resumed on the road to Frederick till we reached a small village called Cooperstown, where our route turned short to the right. Here I halted the column to feed, as the horses were much fatigued and famished. The column, after an hour's halt, continued through Harbaugh's Valley, by Zion Church, to pass the Catoctin Mountain. The road separated before debouching from the mountain, one fork leading to the left by Smithtown, and the other to the right, bearing more toward Leitersburg.

I divided my command, in order to make the passage more certain, Colonel Ferguson, commanding Jenkins' brigade, taking the left road, and Chambliss' brigade, which I accompanied, the other. Before reaching the western entrance to this pass, I found it held by the enemy, and had to dismount a large portion of the command, and fight from crag to crag of the mountains to dislodge the enemy, already posted.

Our passage was finally forced, and, as my column emerged from the mountains, it received the fire of the enemy's battery, posted to the left, on the road to Boonsborough. I ascertained, too, about this time by the firing that the party on the other route had met with resistance, and sent at once to apprise Colonel Ferguson of our passage, and directed him, if not already through, to withdraw, and come by the same route I had followed. Our artillery was soon in position, and a few fires drove the enemy from his position.

I was told by a citizen that the party I had just attacked was the cavalry of Kilpatrick, who had claimed to have captured several thousand prisoners and 400 or 500 wagons from our forces near Monterey; but I was further informed that not more than 40 wagons accompanied them, and other facts I heard led me to believe the success was far overrated. About this time, Captain [G. M. ] Emack, Maryland cavalry, with his arm in a sling, came to us, and reported that he had been in the fight of the night before, and partially confirmed the statement of the citizen, and informed me, to my surprise, that a large portion of Ewell's corps trains had preceded the army through the mountains.

It was nearly night, and I felt it of the first importance to open communication with the main army, particularly as I was led to believe that a portion of this force might still be hovering on its flanks. I sent a trusty and intelligent soldier (Private Robert W. Goode, First Virginia Cavalry) to reach the commanding general by a route across the country, and relate to him what I knew, as well as what he might discover en route, and moved toward Leitersburg as soon as Colonel Ferguson came up, who, although his advance had forced the passage of the gap, upon the receipt of my dispatch turned back and came by the same route I had taken, thus making an unnecessary circuit of several miles, and not reaching me till after dark.

Having heard from the commanding general at Leitersburg about daylight (6 o'clock) next morning, and being satisfied that all of Kilpatrick's force had gone toward Boonsborough, I immediately, notwithstanding the march of a greater portion of both the preceding nights, set out toward Boonsborough. Jones' brigade had now arrived by the route from Fairfield. Soon after night, Brigadier-General Jones, whose capture had been reported by Captain Emack, came from the direction of Williamsport, whither he had gone with the portion of the train which escaped. The enemy's movements had separated him from his command, and he had made a very narrow escape. He informed me of Imboden's arrival at Williamsport.

Having reached Cavetown, I directed General Jones to proceed on the Boonsborough road a few miles, and thence proceed to Funkstown, which point I desired him to hold, covering the eastern front of Hagerstown. Chambliss' brigade proceeded direct from Leitersburg to Hagerstown, and Robertson's took the same route, both together a very small command.

Diverging from Jones' line of march at Cavetown, I proceeded with Jenkins' brigade, by way of Chewsville, toward Hagerstown. Upon arriving at the former place, it was ascertained that the enemy was nearing Hagerstown with a large force of cavalry from the direction of Boonsborough, and that Colonel Chambliss needed reinforcements. Jenkins' brigade was pushed forward, and, arriving before Hagerstown, found the enemy in possession, and made an attack in flank by this road, Jones coming up farther to the left, and opening with a few shots of artillery. A small body of infantry, under Brigadier-General Iverson, also held the north edge of the town, aided by the cavalry of Robertson and Chambliss. Our operations were here much embarrassed by our great difficulty in preventing this latter force from mistaking us for the enemy, several shots striking very near our column. I felt sure that the enemy's designs were directed against Williamsport, where, I was informed by General Jones, our wagons were congregated in a narrow space at the foot of the hill, near the river, which was too much swollen to admit their passage to the south bank. I therefore urged on all side the most vigorous attack to save our trains at Williamsport. Our force was very perceptibly much smaller than the enemy's, but by bold front and determined attack, with a reliance on that help which has never failed me, I hoped to raise the siege of Williamsport, if, as I believed, that was the real object of the enemy's designs. Hagerstown is 6 miles from Williamsport, the country between being almost entirely cleared, but intersected by innumerable fences and ditches. The two places are connected by a lane and perfectly straight macadamized road. The enemy's dismounted skirmishers fought from street to street, and some time elapsed before the town was entirely clear, the enemy taking the road first toward Sharpsburg, but afterward turned to the Williamsport road. Just as the town was cleared, I heard the sound of artillery at Williamsport.

The cavalry, excepting the two brigades with General Fitz. Lee, were now pretty well concentrated at Hagerstown, and one column, under Colonel Chambliss, was pushed directly down the road after the enemy, while Robertson's two regiments and Jenkins' brigade kept to the left of the road, moving in a parallel direction with Chambliss. A portion of the Stuart Horse Artillery also accompanied the movement. The first charge was gallantly executed by the leading brigade (Chambliss'), now numbering only a few hundred men, the Ninth and Thirteenth Virginia Cavalry participating with marked gallantry. The column on the flank was now hurried up to attack the enemy in flank, but the obstacles, such as post and rail fences, delayed its progress so long that the enemy had time to rally along a crest of rocks and fences, from which he opened with artillery, raking the road.

Jenkins' brigade was ordered to dismount and deploy over the difficult ground. This was done with marked effect and boldness, Lieutenant-Colonel Witcher, as usual, distinguishing himself by his courage and conduct. The enemy, thus dislodged, was closely pressed by the mounted cavalry, but made one effort at a counter-charge, which was gallantly met and repulsed by Col. James B. Gordon, commanding a fragment of the Fifth North Carolina Cavalry, that officer exhibiting under my eye individual prowess deserving special commendation. The repulse was soon after converted into a rout by Colonel Lomax's regiment (Eleventh Virginia Cavalry), Jones' brigade, which now took the road, under the gallant leadership of its colonel, with drawn sabers, and charged down the turnpike under a fearful fire of artillery.

Lieutenant-Colonel Funsten behaved with conspicuous gallantry in this charge, and Captain [S.] Winthrop, a volunteer aide of Lieutenant-General Longstreet, also bore himself most gallantly.

The enemy was now very near Williamsport, and this determined and vigorous attack in rear soon compelled him to raise the siege of that place, and leave in hasty discomfiture by the Downsville road. His withdrawal was favored by night, which set in just as we reached the ridge overlooking Williamsport. An important auxiliary to this attack was rendered by Brig. Gen. Fitz. Lee, who reached the vicinity of Williamsport by the Greencastle road very opportunely, and participated in the attack with his accustomed spirit.

Great credit is due the command for the fearless and determined manner in which they rushed upon the enemy and compelled him to loose his hold upon the main portion of the transportation of the army. Without this attack, it is certain that our trains would have fallen into the hands of the enemy, for, while some resistance was made by General Imboden, still, the size and nature of his command, the peculiar conformation of the ground, overlooked by hills and approached by six plain roads, go to show conclusively that not even a display of Spartan heroism on the part of his command could have saved those wagons from the torch of the enemy. I communicated with him after opening the road, by a lieutenant, whom I met but a short distance from the town. Officers present with General Imboden during the attack assure me I am right in the foregoing opinion. I was apprised when about midway that Lieutenant-General Longstreet had arrived at Hagerstown.

As a part of the operations of this period, I will here report that about 60 of the wagons belonging to Lee's brigade, while in the special charge of General Imboden, en route to Williamsport, near Mer-cersburg, were captured by the enemy. A court of inquiry has been convened to inquire into the circumstances of this capture. I therefore forbear animadversion on the subject.

My command bivouacked near Hagerstown, and I took position that night on the road leading from Hagerstown to Boonsborough.

The next day (July 7), I proceeded to Downsville, establishing there a portion of Wofford's brigade, sent me for the purpose by General Longstreet, and posted Jenkins' cavalry brigade on that portion of our front in advance of the infantry. Robertson's brigade, being small, and the enemy being least threatening from that direction, was assigned to the north front of Hagerstown, connecting with General Jones, on the right, on the Cavetown road. The Maryland cavalry was ordered on the National road and toward Greencastle, on a scout.

On the 8th, the cavalry was thrown forward toward Boonsborough, advancing on the different roads, in order, by a bold demonstration, to threaten an advance upon the enemy, and thus cover the retrograde of the main body. The move was successful, the advance under General Jones encountering the enemy on the Boonsborough road, at Beaver Creek Bridge, from which point to the verge of Boonsborough an animated fight ensued, principally on foot, the ground being entirely too soft from recent rains to operate successfully with cavalry. This contest was participated in in a very handsome manner by the other brigades (Fitz. Lee's, Hampton's, now commanded by Baker, and W. H. F. Lee's, commanded by Chambliss) and the Stuart Horse Artillery. Prisoners taken assured us the main cavalry force of the enemy was in our front, which, notwithstanding their known superiority in numbers and range of fire-arms, was driven steadily before us, our brave men, nothing daunted or dispirited by the reverses of the army, maintaining a predominance of pluck over the enemy calculated to excite the pride and admiration of beholders. Just as we neared the village, Jenkins' brigade, under Ferguson, moved up on the Williamsport road, driving the enemy on that flank in such a manner as to cause him to begin his withdrawal from the village to the mountain pass. His batteries had been driven away from the hill by the Napoleons of McGregor's battery, which, for close fighting, evinced this day their great superiority over rifled guns of greater number.

About this time, I was informed that the enemy was heavily re-enforced, and that our ammunition, by this protracted engagement, was nearly exhausted; and, despairing of getting possession of the town, which was completely commanded by artillery in the mountain gap, and believing that, in compelling the enemy to act upon the defensive (all that day retreating before us) the desired object had been fully attained, I began to retire toward Funkstown, excepting Jenkins' brigade, which was ordered to its former position on the Williamsport road. The enemy, observing this from his mountain perch, tried to profit by it with a vigorous movement on our heels, but was foiled. As the last regiment was crossing the bridge over Beaver Creek, a squadron of the enemy more bold than its comrades galloped forward as if to charge. Steadily a portion of the First North Carolina Cavalry awaited their arrival within striking distance, but, before reaching their vicinity, the enemy veered off across the fields, when a Blakely gun of Chew's battery, advantageously posted on a point, marked their movement, and, although the squadron moved at a gallop, never did sportsman bring down his bird with more unerring shot than did that Blakely tell upon that squadron. In vain did it turn to the right and left. Each shot seemed drawn to the flying target with fatal accuracy, until the enemy, driven by the shots of the Blakely and followed by shouts of derision of our cavalry, escaped at full speed over the plain. The command moved leisurely to the vicinity of Funkstown, and bivouacked for the night.

The fight of the 8th administered a quietus to the enemy on the 9th, and my command kept the position in front of Funkstown assigned to it the night before.

The left of our main line of battle now rested just in rear of Funkstown, on the Antietam, and some infantry and artillery were thrown forward as a support to the cavalry beyond.

The enemy advanced on the 10th on the Boonsborough road, and our cavalry was engaged dismounted nearly all day. General Jones was farther to the left, on the Cavetown road, and the infantry was placed in position covering Funkstown, with dismounted cavalry on each flank. The enemy's advance was handsomely repulsed, in which Lieutenant-Colonel Witcher's cavalry, on foot, behind a stone fence immediately on the left of the turnpike, performed a very gallant part, standing their ground with unflinching tenacity. On the left, a portion of Fitz. Lee's brigade, under Captain Wooldridge, Fourth Virginia Cavalry, who handled his skirmishers with great skill and effect, compelled the enemy's infantry to seek cover in a body of woods at some distance from our lines.

In this day's operations, the infantry before mentioned participated very creditably, indeed, in the center, and I regret exceedingly that I have not the means of knowing the regiments and commanders, so as to mention them with that particularity to which by their gallantry they are entitled; but their conduct has no doubt been duly chronicled by their commanders, and laid before the commanding general, a part of which was under his own eye.

Owing to the great ease with which the position at Funkstown could be flanked on the right, and, by a secret movement at night, the troops there cut off, it was deemed prudent to withdraw at night to the west side of the Antietam, which was accordingly done.

July 11 was not characterized by any general engagement, excepting that General Fitz. Lee, now on the right, toward Downsville, was compelled to retire upon the main body; and the main body having assumed a shorter line, with its left resting on the National road, just west of Hagerstown, Chambliss' brigade was sent to that flank, and General Fitz. Lee's, also. The enemy made no movement on Jones' front, embracing the Funkstown and Cavetown roads.

On the 12th, firing began early, and the enemy having advanced on several roads on Hagerstown, our cavalry forces retired without serious resistance, and massed on the left of the main body, reaching with heavy outposts the Conococheague, on the National road. The infantry having already had time to intrench themselves, it was no longer desirable to defer the enemy's attack.

The 13th was spent in reconnoitering on the left, Rodes' division occupying the extreme left of our infantry, very near Hagerstown, a little north of the National road. Cavalry pickets were extended beyond the railroad leading to Chambersburg, and everything put in readiness to resist the enemy's attack. The situation of our communications south of the Potomac caused the commanding general to desire more cavalry on that side, and, accordingly, Brigadier-General Jones' brigade (one of whose regiments, Twelfth Virginia Cavalry, had been left in Jefferson) was detached, and sent to cover our communication with Winchester. The cavalry on the left consisted now of Fitz. Lee's, W. H. F. Lee's, Baker's, and Robertson's brigades, the latter being a mere handful.

On the 13th, skirmishing continued at intervals, but it appeared that the enemy, instead of attacking, was intrenching himself in our front, and the commanding general determined to cross the Potomac. The night of the 13th was chosen for this move, and the arduous and difficult task of bringing up the rear was, as usual, assigned to the cavalry. Just before night (which was unusually rainy), the cavalry was disposed from right to left, to occupy, dismounted, the trenches of the infantry at dark, Fitz. Lee's brigade holding the line of Longstreet's corps, Baker's of Hill's corps, and the remainder of Ewell's corps. A pontoon bridge had been constructed at Falling Waters, some miles below Williamsport, where Longstreet's and Hill's corps were to cross, and Ewell's corps was to ford the river at Williamsport, in rear of which last, after daylight, the cavalry was also to cross, excepting that Fitz. Lee's brigade, should he find the pontoon bridge clear in time, was to cross at the bridge; otherwise to cross at the ford at Williamsport.

The operation was successfully performed by the cavalry. General Fitz. Lee, finding the bridge would not be clear in time for his command, moved after daylight to the ford, sending two squadrons to cross in rear of the infantry at the bridge. These squadrons, mistaking Longstreet's rear for the rear of the army on that route, crossed over in rear of it. General Hill's troops being notified that these squadrons would follow in his rear, were deceived by some of the enemy's cavalry, who approached very near, in consequence of their belief that they were our cavalry. Although this unfortunate mistake deprived us of the lamented General Pettigrew, whom they mortally wounded, they paid the penalty of their temerity by losing most of their number in killed or wounded, if the accounts of those who witnessed it are to be credited. The cavalry crossed at the fords without serious molestation, bringing up the rear on that route by 8 a.m. on the 14th.

To Baker's (late Hampton's) brigade was assigned the duty of picketing the Potomac from Falling Waters to Hedgesville. The other brigades were moved back toward Leetown, Robertson's being sent to the fords of the

Shenandoah, where he already had a picket, which, under Captain [L. A.] Johnson, of the North Carolina cavalry, had handsomely repulsed the enemy in their advance on Ashby's Gap, inflicting severe loss, with great disparity in numbers.

Harper's Ferry was again in possession of the enemy, and Colonel Harman, Twelfth Virginia Cavalry, had in an engagement with the enemy gained a decided success, but was himself captured by his horse falling.

Upon my arrival at the Bower that afternoon (15th), I learned that a large force of the enemy's cavalry was between Shepherdstown and Leetown, and determined at once to attack him in order to defeat any designs he might have in the direction of Martinsburg.

I made disposition accordingly, concentrating cavalry in his front, and early on the 16th moved Fitz. Lee's brigade down the turnpike, toward Shepherdstown, supported by Chambliss, who, though quite ill, with that commendable spirit which has always distinguished him, remained at the head of his brigade. Jenkins' brigade was ordered to advance on the road from Martinsburg toward Shepherdstown, so as by this combination to expose one of the enemy's flanks, while Jones, now near Charlestown, was notified of the attack, in order that he might co-operate. No positive orders were sent him, as his precise locality was not known.

These dispositions having been arranged, I was about to attack when I received a very urgent message from the commanding general to repair at once to his headquarters. I therefore committed to Brig. Gen. Fitz. Lee the consummation of my plans, and reported at once to the commanding general, whom I found at Bunker Hill. Returning in the afternoon, I proceeded to the scene of conflict on the turnpike, and found that General Fitz. Lee had, with his own and Chambliss' brigades, driven the enemy steadily to within a mile of Shepherdstown, Jenkins' brigade not having yet appeared on the left. However, it soon after arrived in Fitz. Lee's rear, and moved up to his support. The ground was not practicable for cavalry, and the main body was dismounted, and advanced in line of battle. The enemy retired to a strong position behind stone fences and barricades, near Colonel [A. R.] Boteler's residence, and it being nearly dark, obstinately maintained his ground at this last point until dark, to cover his withdrawal.

Preparations were made to renew the attack vigorously next morning, but daybreak revealed that the enemy had retired toward Harper's Ferry.

The enemy's loss in killed and wounded was heavy. We had several killed and wounded, and among the latter Col. James H. Drake, First Virginia Cavalry, was mortally wounded, dying that night (16th), depriving his regiment of a brave and zealous leader, and his country of one of her most patriotic defenders.

The commanding general was very desirous of my moving a large portion of my command at once into Loudoun, but the recent rains had so swollen the Shenandoah that it was impossible to ford it, and cavalry scouting parties had to swim their horses over.

In the interval of time from July 16 to the 22d, the enemy made a demonstration on Hedgesville, forcing back Baker's brigade. Desultory skirmishing was kept up on that front for several days with the enemy, while our infantry was engaged in tearing up the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad near Martinsburg. Parts of Jones' brigade were also engaged with the enemy in spirited conflicts not herein referred to, resulting very creditably to our arms, near Fairfield, Pa., and on the Cavetown road from Hagerstown, the Sixth and Seventh Virginia Cavalry being particularly distinguished. Accounts of these will be found in the reports of Brigadier-General Jones and Colonel Baker.

It soon became apparent that the enemy was moving upon our right flank, availing himself of the swollen condition of the Shenandoah to interpose his army, by a march along the east side of the Blue Ridge, between our present position and Richmond. Longstreet's corps having already moved to counteract this effort, enough cavalry was sent, under Brigadier-General Robertson, for his advance guard through Front Royal and Chester Gap, while Baker's brigade was ordered to bring up the rear of Ewell's corps, which was in rear, and Jones' brigade was ordered to picket the Lower Shenandoah as long as necessary for the safety of that flank, and then follow the movement of the army. Fitz. Lee's, W. H. F. Lee's, and Jenkins' brigades, by a forced march from the vicinity of Leetown, through Millwood, endeavored to reach Manassas Gap, so as to hold it on the flank of the army, but it was already in possession of the enemy, and the Shenandoah, still high, in order to be crossed without interfering with the march of the main army, had to be forded below Front Royal.

The cavalry already mentioned, early on the 23d reached Chester Gap by a by-path, passing on the army's left, and, with great difficulty and a forced march, that night bivouacked below Gaines' Cross-Roads, holding the Rockford road and Warrenton turnpike, on which, near Amissville, the enemy had accumulated a large force of cavalry.

On the 24th, while moving forward to find the locality of the enemy, firing was heard toward Newby's Cross-Roads, which was afterward ascertained to be a portion of the enemy's artillery firing on Hill's column, marching on the Richmond road. Before the cavalry could reach the scene of action, the enemy had been driven off by the infantry, and on the 25th the march was continued, and the line of the Rappahannock resumed.

In taking a retrospect of this campaign, it is necessary, in order to appreciate the value of the services of the cavalry, to correctly estimate the amount of labor to be performed, the difficulties to be encountered, and the very extended sphere of operations, mainly in the enemy's country. In the exercise of the discretion vested in me by the commanding general, it was deemed practicable to move entirely in the enemy's rear, intercepting his communications with his base (Washington), and, inflicting damage upon his rear, to rejoin the army in Pennsylvania in time to participate in its actual conflicts.

The result abundantly confirms my judgment as to the practicability as well as utility of the move. The main army, I was advised by the commanding general, would move in two columns for the Susquehanna. Early commanded the advance of that one of these columns to the eastward, and I was directed to communicate with him as early as practicable after crossing the Potomac, and place my command on his right flank. It was expected I would find him in York. The newspapers of the enemy, my only source of information, chronicled his arrival there and at Wrightsville, on the Susquehanna, with great particularity. I therefore moved to join him in that vicinity. The enemy's army was moving in a direction parallel with me. I was apprised of its arrival at Taneytown when I was near Hanover, Pa.; but believing, from the lapse of time, that our army was already in York or at Harrisburg, where it could choose its battle-ground with the enemy, I hastened to place my command with it. It is believed that, had the corps of Hill and Longstreet moved on instead of halting near Chambersburg, York could have been the place of concentration instead of Gettysburg.

This move of my command between the enemy's seat of government and the army charged with its defense involved serious loss to the enemy in men and matériel (over 1,000 prisoners having been captured), and spread terror and consternation to the very gates of the capital. The streets were barricaded for defense, as also was done in Baltimore on the day following. This move drew the enemy's overweening force of cavalry, from its aggressive attitude toward our flank near Williamsport and Hagerstown, to the defense of its own communications, now at my mercy. The entire Sixth Army Corps, in addition, was sent to intercept me at Westminster, arriving there the morning I left, which in the result prevented its participation in the first two days' fight at Gettysburg.

Our trains in transit were thus not only secured, but it was done in a way that at the same time seriously injured the enemy. General Meade also detached 4,000 troops, under General French, to escort public property to Washington from Frederick, a step which certainly would have been unnecessary but for my presence in his rear, thus weakening his army to that extent. In fact, although in his own country, he had to make large detachments to protect his rear and baggage. General Meade also complains that his movements were delayed by the detention of his cavalry in his rear. He might truthfully have added, by the movement in his rear of a large force of Confederate cavalry, capturing his trains and cutting all his communications with Washington.

It is not to be supposed such delay in his operations could have been so effectually caused by any other disposition of the cavalry. Moreover, considering York as the point of junction, as I had every reason to believe it would be, the route I took was quite as direct and more expeditious than the alternate one proposed, and there is reason to believe on that route that my command would have been divided up in the different gaps of South Mountain covering our flank, while the enemy, by concentration upon any one, could have greatly endangered our baggage and ordnance trains without exposing his own.

It was thought by many that my command could have rendered more service had it been in advance of the army the first day at Gettysburg, and the commanding general complains of a want of cavalry on the occasion; but it must be remembered that the cavalry (Jenkins' brigade) specially selected for advance guard to the army by the commanding general on account of its geographical location at the time, was available for this purpose, and had two batteries of horse artillery serving with it. If therefore, the peculiar functions of cavalry with the army were not satisfactorily performed in the absence of my command, it should rather be attributed to the fact that Jenkins' brigade was not as efficient as it ought to have been, and as its numbers (3,800) on leaving Virginia warranted us in expecting. Even at that time, by its reduction incident to campaign, it numbered far more than the cavalry which successfully covered Jackson's flank movement at Chancellorsville, turned back Stoneman from the James, and drove 3,500 cavalry under Averell across the Rappahannock. Properly handled, such a command should have done everything requisite, and left nothing to detract by the remotest implication from the brilliant exploits of their comrades, achieved under circumstances of great hardship and danger.

Arriving at York, I found that General Early had gone, and it is to be regretted that this officer failed to take any measures by leaving an intelligent scout to watch for my coming or a patrol to meet me, to acquaint me with his destination. He had reason to expect me, and had been directed to look out for me. He heard my guns at Hanover, and correctly conjectured whose they were, but left me no clew to his destination on leaving York, which would have saved

me a long and tedious march to Carlisle and thence back to Gettysburg. I was informed by citizens that he was going to Shippensburg.

I still believed that most of our army was before Harrisburg, and justly regarded a march to Carlisle as the most likely to place me in communication with the main army. Besides, as a place for rationing my command, now entirely out, I believed it desirable. The cavalry suffered much in this march, day and night, from loss of sleep, and the horses from fatigue, and, while in Fairfax, for want of forage, not even grass being attainable.

In Fauquier, the rough character of the roads and lack of facilities for shoeing, added to the casualties of every day's battle and constant wear and tear of man and horse, reduced the command very much in numbers. In this way some regiments were reduced to less than 100 men; yet, when my command arrived at Gettysburg, from the accessions which it received from the weak horses left to follow the command, it took its place in line of battle with a stoutness of heart and firmness of tread impressing one with the confidence of victory which was astounding, considering the hardness of the march lately endured.

With an aggregate loss of about 2,200 killed, wounded, and missing, including the battle of Fleetwood, June 9, we inflicted a loss on the enemy's cavalry confessedly near 5,000.

Some of the reports of subordinate commanders are herewith forwarded; others will follow; and it is hoped they will do justice to that individual prowess for which Confederate soldiery is most noted, and which the limits of personal observation and this report deprive me of the power of doing.

Appended will be found a statement of casualties and a map; also a list of non-commissioned officers and privates whose conduct as bearers of dispatches and otherwise entitle them to favorable mention.

The bravery, heroism, fortitude, and devotion of my command are commended to the special attention of the commanding general, and are worthy the gratitude of their countrymen.

I desire to mention among the brigadier-generals one whose enlarged comprehensions of the functions of cavalry, whose diligent attention to the preservation of its efficiency, and intelligent appreciation and faithful performance of the duties confided to him, point to as one of the first cavalry leaders on the continent, and richly entitle him to promotion. I allude to Brig. Gen. Fitz. Lee.

I cannot here particularize the conduct of the many officers who deserve special mention of less rank than brigadier-general without extending my remarks more than would be proper. To my staff collectively, however, I feel at liberty to express thus officially my grateful appreciation of the zeal, fidelity, and ability with which they discharged their several duties, and labored to promote the success of the command.

Maj. Heros von Borcke, assistant adjutant and inspector general (that gallant officer from Prussia, who so early espoused our cause), was disabled in Fauquier, so as to deprive me of his valuable services on the expedition, but it is hoped that the command will not long be deprived of his inspiring presence on the field.

Maj. Henry B. McClellan, my adjutant-general, was constantly at my side, and with his intelligence, ready pen, and quick comprehension, greatly facilitated the discharge of my duties.

The untiring energy, force of character, and devotion to duty of Maj. A. R. Venable, my inspector-general, and Lieut. G. M. Ryals, C. S. Army, provost-marshal, deserve my special gratitude and praise.

The same qualities, united to a thorough knowledge of much of the country, are ascribable to Capt. B. S. White, C. S. Army, who, though still suffering from a severe wound received at Fleetwood, accompanied the command, and his services proclaim him an officer of merit and distinction.

Chief Surgeon Eliason; Captain Blackford, engineer; Captain [John Esten] Cooke, ordnance officer; Lieutenant [Chiswell] Dabney, aide-de-camp; Asst. Engineer F. S. Robertson; Cadet [W. Q.] Hullihen. C. S. Army, and Lieut. H. Hagan, Virginia Provisional Army, all performed their duties with commendable zeal and credit.

Major [Norman R.] Fitzhugh, chief, and Capt. J. M. Hanger, assistant quartermaster, and Maj. W. J. Johnson, chief commissary, discharged their arduous duties in their usual highly creditable manner.

First Lieut. R. B. Kennon, Provisional Army Confederate States, temporarily attached, on two different occasions was intrusted with duties attended with great peril, which he performed in a highly successful and satisfactory manner--once in testing experimentally at, night an unknown ford on the Potomac, and again in bearing a dispatch to the commanding general from Emmitsburg.

Grateful to the Giver of all good for the attainment of such results with such small comparative losses, I have the honor to be, most respectfully, your obedient servant,

J. E. B. STUART,  
Major-General.

<http://civilwarhome.com/stuart.htm>

**Report of Surg. Lafayette Guild, C. S. Army,  
Medical Director, the Army of Northern Virginia.  
JUNE 3-AUGUST 1, 1863.--The Gettysburg Campaign.  
O.R.-- SERIES I--VOLUME XXVII/2 [S# 44]**



**MEDICAL DIRECTOR'S OFFICE,  
*Camp near Culpeper Court-House, July 29, 1863.***

**Surg. Gen. S. P. MOORE,**  
*Richmond, Va.*

SIR: At midnight, July 3, after the fiercest and most sanguinary battle ever fought on this continent, the general commanding gave orders for our army to withdraw from Gettysburg and fall back to Hagerstown. I inclose you a copy of my instructions to the corps of medical directors issued on that occasion. Every available means of transportation was called into requisition for removing the wounded from the field infirmaries, and, on the evening of the 4th, our ambulance trains took up their line of march by two routes, guarded as well as could be by our broken-down and inefficient cavalry. One train went by Cashtown, the other by Fairfield. The latter train was attacked by a body of the enemy's cavalry, who destroyed many wagons and paroled the wounded private soldiers, but taking with them all of the officers who fell into their hands. The former train was more fortunate; however, it, too, was attacked by the enemy, and met with some little loss in wagons and prisoners.

The poor wounded suffered very much indeed in their rapid removal by day and night, over rough roads, through mountain passes, and across streams, toward the Potomac. Those who could be removed from the battle-field and infirmaries were concentrated at Williamsport, and transferred to the Virginia bank of the river, by rafts and ferry-boats, as rapidly as the swollen condition of the stream would permit.

Since my hasty and imperfect letter of the 10th instant from the vicinity of Hagerstown, Md., I have not had time or opportunity to report to you more fully our movements. At Hagerstown, as I informed you in my last letter, we fully expected another battle, and prepared for it.

We waited there six long days, nearly every day the two armies engaging in desultory skirmishing. When the enemy made his appearance in force, instead of attacking us, as we expected, he commenced fortifying himself all along our line of battle, his line being little less than a mile from ours.

Our supplies for both men and animals were being rapidly exhausted, and the enemy declining battle by laying aside his muskets and taking to his picks and shovels, orders were given for us to resume our march toward the Potomac on the 13th instant. The army crossed at three points (two fords near Williamsport, very deep and bad fords, the river being swollen, at which quite a number of animals were drowned, and the pontoon bridge at Failing Waters) without molestation from the enemy, who contented himself with picking up stragglers.

Our crossing the river without annoyance evidently shows that the enemy were very badly crippled, and could not risk another general engagement. The sufferings of the wounded were distressing. Indeed, the healthiest and most robust suffered extremely in crossing the river.

The head of our column commenced its passage at dark on the 13th instant, and, in the afternoon of the 14th, the rear guard reached the south bank.

On July 15, we encamped near Bunker Hill, 12 miles north of Winchester, and remained there

until the 21st, refreshing the troops and removing to the rear our sick and wounded from Winchester and Jordan Springs, at which place I found about 4,000 sick and wounded, steps for their removal to Staunton being immediately taken. All who could bear transportation were gotten off by the 22d instant, less than 150 remaining at the two places.

Mount Jackson and Harrisonburg have been used simply as wayside hospitals, where the sick and wounded were refreshed with food, and wounds redressed.

Medical officers, with supplies of all kinds, being stationed at the two points, on the 22d the army resumed its march, the First and Third Corps taking different routes to Front Royal and Chester Gap, where they were convalesced, and the march continued to this point, where they encamped on the 25th, and are now resting after their arduous night marches through great inclemency of weather. The Second Army Corps crossed the Blue Ridge at Thornton's Gap, south of Chester Gap, and will encamp in our vicinity to-day. Considerable sickness has been the consequence of their fatigue and exposure. Diarrhea, dysentery, continued fever, and rheumatism preponderate.

I have prohibited the establishment of a hospital at Culpeper CourtHouse, but organized a depot for the sick and wounded who cannot be treated in camp. Those who should go to general hospitals are sent with all dispatch to Gordonsville for distribution. The sick and wounded should, in my opinion, by no means be allowed to accumulate at Gordonsville. It is or may be at any time exposed to cavalry raids, and the inhuman enemy invariably, when an opportunity offers, drag our sick and wounded officers (at the sacrifice of their lives) into their own lines.

Mount Jackson and Harrisonburg, in the Valley of the Shenandoah, should be abandoned as hospitals, as far as practicable, leaving only those patients whose lives would be endangered by transportation.

I have ordered Surgeon {R. J.] Breckinridge, medical inspector of the army, to proceed to the hospitals near the army where our sick and wounded have been sent since the battle of Gettysburg, and to have all who are fit for duty returned to their regiments. I inclose for your information a copy of my letter of instructions to him and order from the general commanding. The list of casualties has been forwarded to my office, and embraces the whole army, with the exception of two brigades, which I have taken steps to have made out.

Our loss at Gettysburg was very heavy, indeed, numbering about 14,000 killed and wounded. The consolidated list will be furnished you at an early day.

At the battle of Winchester, fought by General Ewell's corps on June 13, 14, and 15, our loss was comparatively small--42 killed and 210 wounded.

I will also forward to you very soon the list of casualties, properly prepared.

Complaints are very frequently made by medical officers and officers of the line that many of the sick and wounded who are sent to general hospital are never heard from, the hospital surgeons failing to report deaths, discharges, furloughs, &c. I would again respectfully request that means be adopted for the correction of this neglect of duty on the part of medical officers in general hospital. I am exceedingly anxious to have a personal interview with you relative to some changes in the organization of our corps in the field, particularly in the purveying department. It is impossible for me to visit Richmond at this time, but hope soon to have an opportunity. My office is exhausted of blank forms. Please have forwarded to me the following, viz.

Source: "Official Records of the War of the Rebellion"

<http://www.civilwarhome.com/guild2.htm>

I am, sir, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

L. GUILD,

Medical Director, Army of Northern Virginia.

# The Gettysburg Reunion of 1913

By Calvin E. Johnson Jr. [Wednesday, June 30, 2010](#)

Happy 234th birthday America!

The War Between the States Sesquicentennial, 150th Anniversary, runs from 2010 through 2015. The Georgia Division Sons of Confederate Veterans has an information [page](http://www.150wbts.org/). <http://www.150wbts.org/>

Make it a family affair to attend the events planned throughout the USA . The National SCV Sesquicentennial Commission has a [website](http://www.confederate150.com/). <http://www.confederate150.com/>

The fading photos and stories of Union and Confederate Veterans from that summer of 1913, shaking hands, sharing a meal and trading war stories is a special part of our National Heritage well worth sharing.

Do young people know who Gen. Robert Edward Lee, Major Gen. George Edward Pickett and Major Gen. Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain were? Do schools still teach children about these men and all those who met on that famous War Between the States battlefield at Gettysburg , Pennsylvania ? Some call the Gettysburg Battlefield the most haunted place in America as many thousands died on that fateful month in July, 1863.



“Comrades and friends, these splendid statues of marble and granite and bronze shall finally crumble to dust, and in the ages to come, will perhaps be forgotten, but the spirit that has called this great assembly of our people together, on this field, shall live forever.”——Dr. Nathaniel D. Cox at 1913 Gettysburg Reunion

The summer heat of July 1913 did not keep the old Confederate and Union Veterans from attending the 50th anniversary of the Battle of Gettysburg. It has been written that over 50,000 sons of the North and South came for what has been called the largest combined reunion of War Between the States veterans.

The youngest veteran was reported to be 61 and the oldest was 112 years young.

No one dared criticize the United States or Confederate flag that flew side by side at the Gettysburg soldier’s reunion of honored men who had been enemies on the field of battle just 50 years earlier.

The State of Pennsylvania hosted the 1913 reunion at the insisting of state Governor John K. Tener. Tener also encouraged other states to arrange rail transportation for the participants. Down South, the United Daughters of the Confederacy helped raise money for the transportation and uniforms for the Confederate veterans.

The soldiers of Blue and Gray, Black and White, came with heads raised high. It is written that the hosts did not count on Black Confederates attending the meeting and had no place to put them however the White Confederates made room for their Southern brothers. Black Union veterans also attended.

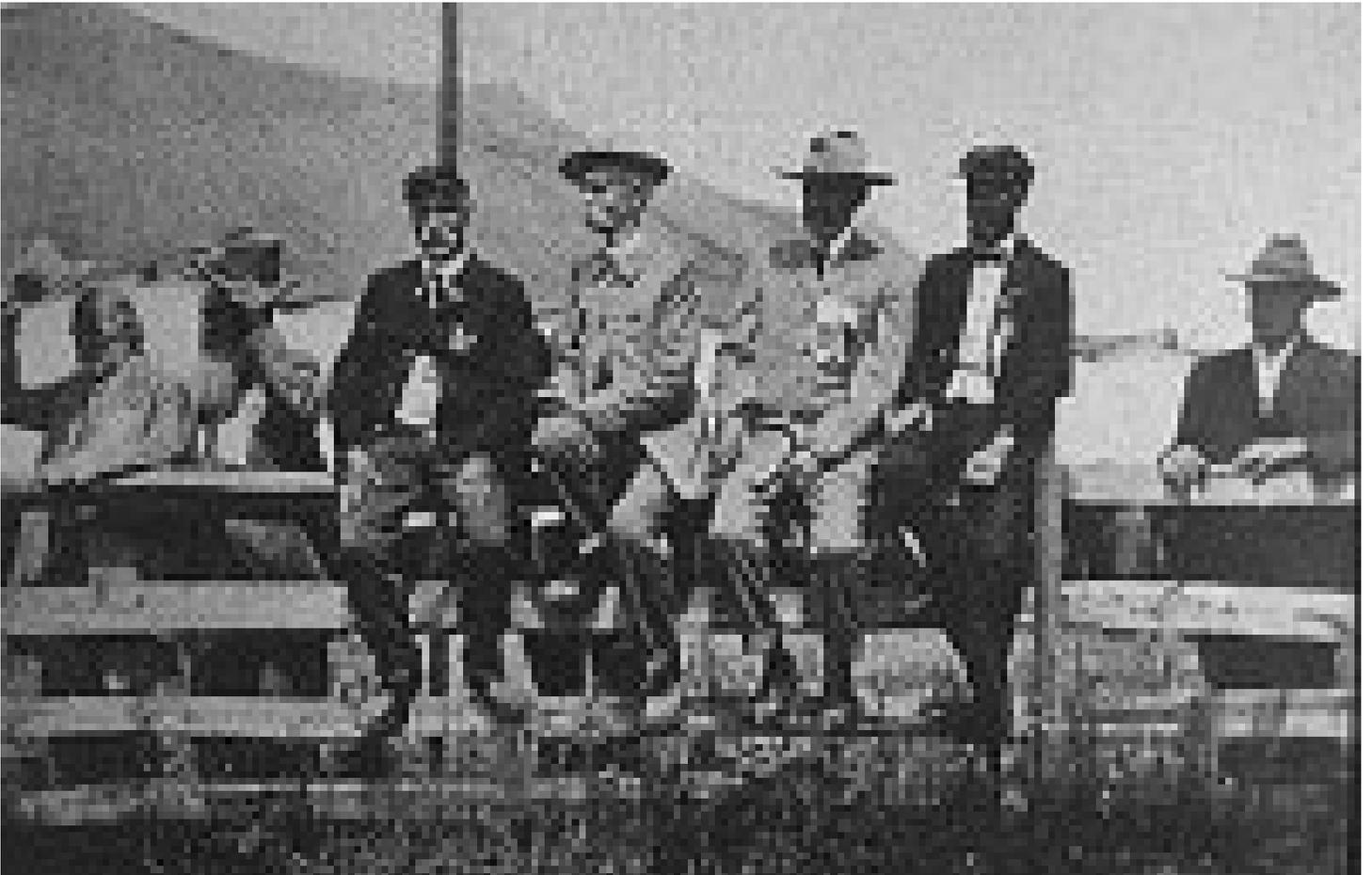


Nearly 700,000 meals were served that included fried chicken, roast pork sandwiches, ice cream and Georgia watermelon. The temperature soared to 100 degrees and almost 10,000 veterans were treated for heat exhaustion and several hundred more were hospitalized. The United States Army was also present in support and the old men loved the attention.

A highlight of the reunion was the Confederate Veterans walk on the path of Gen. George Pickett's charge that was greeted, this time, with a handshake from the Union Veterans.

President Woodrow Wilson spoke to those veterans with compassion and appreciation, and said;

“These venerable men crowding here to this famous field have set us a great example of devotion and utter sacrifice. They were willing to die that the people might live. But their task is done. Their day is turned into evening. They look to us to perfect what they have established. Their work is handed to us, to be done in another way but not in another spirit. Our day is not over; it is upon us in full tide.”



# 150 Years Later, Two States Are Still Fighting Over the Battle of Gettysburg

Virginia wants a captured Confederate flag back. Minnesota's governor says "it would be a sacrilege to return it to them."

by [Brian Resnick](#)

Updated: June 28, 2013 | 12:54 p.m.

June 28, 2013 | 12:40 p.m.



(AP Photo)

Next week marks the 150th anniversary of the Battle of Gettysburg, but it appears, *somehow*, there is still some bad blood between a pair of Northern and Southern states.

Here's the controversy: The Minnesota Historical Society has a Confederate flag in its possession, captured from a Virginia regiment during the last day of the battle. For the sake of the anniversary, Virginia Gov. Bob McDonnell asked Minnesota to loan it to them (McDonnell is the governor [who had declared April 2010](#) "Confederate History Month" at the behest of the Sons of Confederate Veterans, but [then apologized](#) for not mentioning slavery in the proclamation.) Minnesota Gov. Mark Dayton's [response to](#) the request was simple: No way.

As he told a crowd of reporters and Civil War reenactors [earlier this week](#):

The governor of Virginia earlier this year requested that the flag be loaned, quote, unquote, to Virginia to commemorate--it doesn't quite strike me as something they would want to commemorate, but we declined that invitation.

It was taken in a battle at the cost of the blood of all these Minnesotans. And I think it would be a sacrilege to return it to them. It was something that was earned through the incredible courage and valor of men who gave their lives and risked their lives to obtain it. And, as far as I'm concerned, it's a closed subject.

## Why the Resistance? The Abridged Story of the Virginia Flag



Marshall Sherman, 1823-1896  
(via findagrave.com)

The Minnesota 1st Volunteer Infantry Regiment captured the flag on July 3, 1863, the last day of the battle. On July 2, the Minnesota 1st had suffered massive losses after being ordered to conduct a diversionary strike on the Confederates while the Union collected reinforcements. At the end of the day, only 47 out of more than 250 Minnesotan men were still alive. One of those remaining was Pvt. Marshall Sherman (pictured right; he actually sat out the battle).

The next day, Sherman along with the remaining members of the Minnesota 1st were in the center of the Union lines when Confederate Gen. Robert E. Lee ordered an assault. "Pickett's Charge," as it is called, is considered the high-water mark of the Confederacy.

It was a brutal, chaotic scene. "We just rushed in like wild beasts," one Minnesotan fighter [recalled](#). "Men swore and cursed and struggled and fought, grappled in hand-to-hand fight, threw stones, clubbed their muskets, kicked, yelled, and hurrahd." The charge failed, leading to the Union victory at Gettysburg.

Amid the firefight, Sherman eyed a Virginian "shouting like mad," according to a *Roanoke Times* [recollection](#). He was barefoot, the legend goes, as he charged the Virginian with his bayonet. Jabbing at the enemy, Sherman said, "Throw down that flag or I'll run you through." He [was awarded](#) the Medal of Honor for his effort.

That's one reason the flag is so important to the state: The blood it took to get it and the valor bestowed upon Sherman for capturing it confer a historical pride. The flag [remains](#) "one of the true treasures of the Minnesota Historical Society," as the society says on its website.

Over the years, there have been many calls for Confederate flags to be returned to their home states. President Cleveland issued even an executive order in 1887 to return the colors of a few Confederate units in an act of good will. Many scoffed at that, including former Confederate President Jefferson Davis, who, according to the *Roanoke Times*, said that banners belong to the captors, by "all known military precedents." Cleveland eventually rescinded the order.

In 2000, Chris Caveness, a Roanoke resident, spearheaded a federal lawsuit to get the flag back in Virginia based on a 1905 act of Congress allowing for the return of Confederate flags in possession of the War Department. From the *Roanoke Times*:

Caveness ... enlisted his own big gun in the form of former Virginia Attorney General Anthony Troy. Helped by a cadre of Richmond Law School students, Troy wrote his own 45-page legal opinion with exhibits, arguing "federal property cannot be abandoned or disposed without Congressional assent." Since Congress never gave the flag away, Troy concluded, Minnesota is illegally in possession of it.

The litigation did not result in action. And the skirmish over the flag continues, 150 years later.

*For those interested in reading more about the fight over the flag, visit the [Minnesota Historical Society](#).*

<http://www.nationaljournal.com/politics/150-years-later-two-states-are-still-fighting-over-the-battle-of-gettysburg-20130628?print=true>

# EARLY HERITAGE VIOLATION!

Efforts of Gettysburg Reunion organizers to BAN CONFEDERATE FLAGS at reunion. The design of "those people" has been to destroy our history and heritage since our defeat.

SEND YOUR KIDS TO SAM DAVIS YOUTH CAMPS !!

<http://www.mosocco.com/pic/porter.jpg>

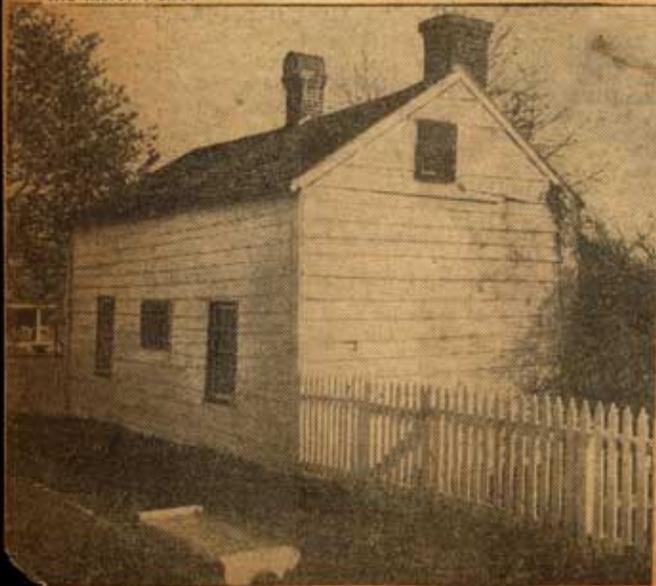
## At 91, General Bullington Still Trips Virginia Reel

Memphis' most distinguished representative will be General Bullington — tall, white-haired and straight as an arrow despite his 91 years—who still drives his own car around town every day and can trip the Virginia Reel as lightly as he did in the days before the Civil War. As one of General Forrest's hard-riding cavalrymen, he fought in numerous bloody engagements and emerged without a scratch.

Outstanding in his memory is the Battle of Franklin in which his outfit was somewhat demoralized by the loss of 12 commanding officers, but not too demoralized to rally and chase the retreating Federals on in to Nashville. He remembers vividly, too, crossing the Tennessee River on a pontoon bridge that swayed dangerously in the swift current as hundreds of whinnying horses gingerly marched across it.

General Bullington's 91 years

This low farm building was the headquarters of General Meade during the Battle of Gettysburg and still stands on the historic site.



have not dimmed the fire in his clear blue eyes or the determination in his soul. This was evidenced recently when his daughter, Mrs. Charles A. Tavel of 283 N. Bellevue, softly protested that the long trip might be a little unwise for a man of his age.

"Daughter," the old soldier said, "I know you mean well, but I've got a head of my own on my shoulders and I intend to use it. I've been taking care of myself pretty well for over 90 years now, and I think I know what I intend to do."

## In Spirit At Least, All 7000 Will Attend

So General Bullington, who carries his four score and eleven years as lightly as a feather, is going to Gettysburg with the rest of the boys. Accompanying the old warrior as an escort will be Ben C. Mathes, son of a Confederate veteran and husband of Mrs. Ben Mathes who is president of the J. Harvey Mathes Chapter of the United Daughters of the Confederacy and one of the outstanding leaders in the Ladies Confederate Memorial Association that arranges programs each year to perpetuate the revered memory of the Southland's soldier dead.

General Bullington will doubtless be one of the most prominent figures at the Gettysburg meeting, as some years ago he was elected honorary commander-in-chief of the United Confederate Veterans for life. He is also past commander for the State of Tennessee.

Not all the 7000 survivors of the 2,000,000 man who formed the armies of the Blue and the Gray 75 years ago will be able to make the trip, of course, as many of them are too feeble to travel or bedridden with the infirmities of age. But all of them will be there at least in spirit to clasp the hand of friendship across the crumbling earthworks that were once soggy with the Northern and Southern blood.

"I will be there with bells on if I am still living," wrote a 94-year-old veteran of the First Tennessee Regiment to the Pennsylvania State Commission which is sponsoring the joint reunion.

From a member of the 151st Illinois Infantry, now living in California, came this word: "I am 98 years young and in very good physical condition considering my age. However, since I am living on borrowed time I have only a few more years at best to continue on this good earth. I pray the opportunity will be granted to be with you on this great occasion."

A 94-year-old veteran from Tennessee (evidently knowing his

veterans, not only of the Civil War but of every other war both before and since) said he was "hoping and praying we all keep sober during the whole time of this important occasion."

A member of the Seventh Regiment, California Volunteers, wrote:

"Can't come. Can't get no company. I was born in Germany, raised in Wisconsin, brought up in California, lived happy in Texas, homesteaded in Minnesota, grasshoppered in Kansas, divorced in New Mexico, served in the Army and dug gold in Arizona for 14 years."

A survivor of Longstreet's Corps who was in the thick of the Battle of Gettysburg wrote from his Louisiana home:

"I would like to look over the old Gettysburg battlefield and see if I can locate some of my knee prints I made while praying and administering water to both the Blue and the Gray wounded soldiers. I hope I may live to make the trip, even though I will be 98 then."

## Plan To Ban Confederate Flag Almost Renewed War

Another Civil War almost burst with full fury when plans for the joint reunion were just getting started. Last September the Grand Army of the Republic, in annual encampment at Madison, Wis., adopted a resolution stipulating that "only the flag of the United States of America" should be exhibited on this momentous occasion.

Well, that really did start something. From one end of the Southland to the other, the old boys who had followed their beloved Stars and Bars from Fort Sumter to Appomattox Court-house, rose right up on their hind legs and let out a Rebel yell that could be heard far and

Spirited as ever despite his 90-odd years, the late General Harry Rene Lee, then commander of the U. C. V., retorted that "stipulations don't mean a thing to the wearers of the Gray; we are going to wave our Confederate flag and wear our Confeder-



Still spry and alert at 93 is John William Porter, Memphis Confederate veteran who is going to Gettysburg to attend the joint reunion of the Blue and the Gray.



Ninety-three-year-old Rev. R. P. Smith of Buntyn who will attend the Gettysburg reunion, has been a minister since 1871.

ate uniforms, too. If they don't like it, they can lump it."

"I want it distinctly understood," General Lee stormed, that the display of Confederate uniforms and flags will be very much in evidence at Gettysburg and that there still exist broad-minded soldiers who opposed each other in the open. They are the men who will be at Gettysburg."

Just when it looked like the hoary-haired Feds and Johnny Rebs were going to get out their muzzle-loading muskets again and go to it, Paul L. Roy, executive secretary of the joint reunion, succeeded in smoothing the troubled waters. Mr. Roy traveled back and forth around the country—begging, pleading and arguing until he finally won his point—and then the message went forth "you can bring your Confederate flag and wave it all you want to."

"God'dernit, them damn Yankees didn't lick us this time, did they?" chortled a white-haired "unreconstructed Rebel" down in Georgia. "As a matter of fact, I'm not so sure they licked us the first time."

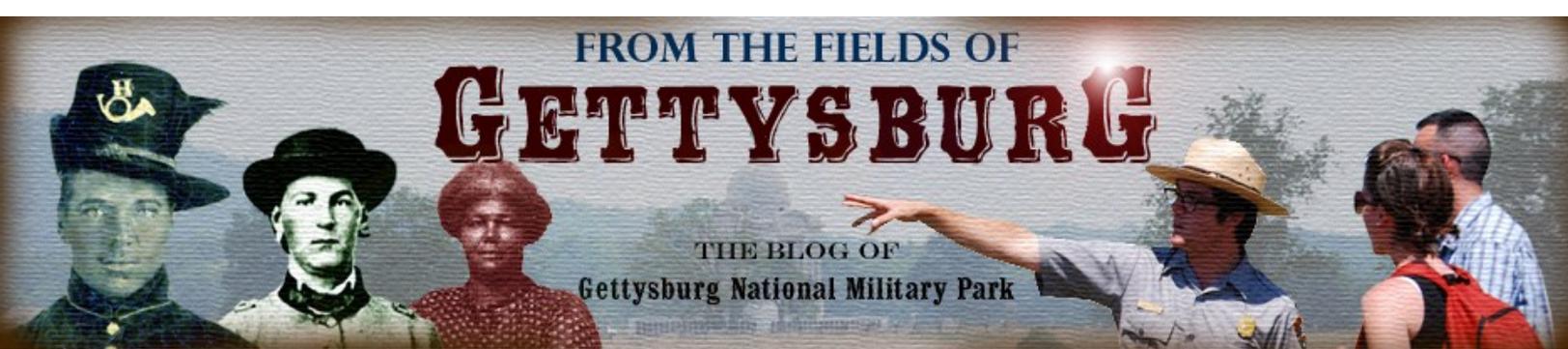
The Southerners attending the historic reunion will be led by General John Milton Claypool of St. Louis, commander-in-chief of the U. C. V. This 92-year-old veteran wasn't in favor of the joint reunion at first, but now that the question of the flag and the uniforms has been settled he thinks it's a good idea.

## "Guess We Can Put Up With Yanks," Says U. C. V. Chief

"I guess I can put up with the Yankees for a few days," he said. "As long as the good Lord has stood for them this long, I'll try my best to last it out."

Another matter which brought a difference of opinion from these oldsters was a suggestion by the Reunion Commission for a re-enactment of Pickett's famous charge on the third day of the battle with regular United States Army troops playing the roles of Federals and Confederates. A few favored this idea, but the majority opposed it on the ground that it might engender bitter feeling and consequently the idea was dropped. After all, there are some things that still burn in the





## What Happened to Gettysburg's Confederate Dead?

Posted on [July 26, 2012](#) by [The Staff](#)

Gettysburg National Military Park Rangers, interns, and volunteers are frequently asked a series of questions by visitors starting with: *Where are the Confederate dead buried?* Many of these visitors have walked through the Soldiers' National Cemetery where they noticed the markers of more than 3,500 Union soldiers, known and unknown, who were killed during the bloody days of early July 1863, yet they observed no burial markers for the approximately same number of Confederates who lost their lives on these identical fields.

After learning from a National Park Ranger that the Confederates are not buried in the cemetery the visitors often ask a second, more concerned question: *"Why aren't the Confederates buried in the national cemetery, aren't they Americans too?"* While it is true that many of the Confederates felt they were still Americans, they were fighting against the United States after having seceded from it three years earlier. Hence when President Lincoln arrived to dedicate the Soldiers' National Cemetery in November 1863 it was for the Union dead only. The Soldiers' National Cemetery was set aside to be the final resting place for those who gave their last full measure *to preserve the Union*. There was to be no room for those trying to destroy it.



Dead of the 2nd South Carolina Infantry lie in partially finished graves on the Rose Farm, the process interrupted on July 3 by the approach of Union troops. This photograph was taken by Alexander Gardner on July 5 or 6, 1863. (Library of Congress)

Shortly after the two warring armies retired from the Gettysburg, they left behind over 7,000 dead scattered around the battlefield. The sheer number of

rapidly decomposing bodies posed an imminent health hazard, if not a ghastly scene. As one Confederate soldier recalled passing over the fields northwest of Gettysburg on July 4, *“The sights and smells that assailed us were simply indescribable—corpses swollen to twice their size, asunder with the pressure of gases and vapors...The odors were nauseating, and so deadly that in a short time we all sickened and were lying with our mouths close to the ground, most of us vomiting profusely.”*

The majority of dead from both armies were buried in shallow graves, placed beneath the soil by those unconcerned with the individual’s name or regiment and bent on completing this disagreeable task as quickly as possible. However in less than two months the journey to the final resting place for the Union dead would commence as they were disinterred from their temporary graves to a place more fitting. Not so for the men wearing butternut and gray. They would remain in their scattered, poorly marked graves for nearly nine more years.

Dr. Rufus B. Weaver in later life. (Hahnemann Medical College)

Beginning in 1871, the first efforts to have Confederate remains removed to southern cemeteries was initiated by the Wake County Ladies Memorial Association in North Carolina. Similar associations in South Carolina and Georgia followed suit and Dr. Rufus Weaver was contracted to supervise the removal of the Confederate dead. This was a daunting task, given the forlorn condition of battlefield graves and the loss of grave markers, many of which had not been maintained or cared for by the farmers upon whose land the graves were located.



Using a journal of identified Confederate burials compiled by Dr. J.W.C. O’Neal (a Virginia-born physician who resided in Gettysburg), as well as his extensive knowledge of the locations of individual sites and mass graves, Dr. Weaver was successful in returning the remains of 3,320 soldiers, the vast majority of which were sent to Hollywood Cemetery in Richmond, Virginia. Fewer numbers of Confederate remains were delivered to cemeteries in Raleigh, North Carolina, Savannah, Georgia, and Charleston, South Carolina, where they were interred in town cemeteries.

On a side note, recent research has found that at least seven Confederate soldiers, through cases of mistaken identity, were buried in the Soldiers’ National Cemetery where they remain to this day. Among them is Major Benjamin W. Leigh, the assistant adjutant general of General Edward Johnson’s Division. Shot down in the final moments of the fighting at Culp’s Hill, Leigh’s bravery and courage in his final moments was witnessed by numerous Union soldiers, who provided the officer a

decent burial on the hill side, going to far as to mark his grave with his initials and unit, though mistaken during the exhumation process for a Union soldier.

Then there is a final question. “*Are there still bodies in the fields that have not been found?*” The answer to this is almost certainly *yes*. Since the 1870’s and throughout much of the 1900’s remains have been uncovered. One noted historian stated that nearly 1,500 Confederate remains from the Gettysburg Campaign have been unaccounted for and there is a possibility that some are still buried at Gettysburg. The most recent discovery occurred in 1995 near the Railroad Cut, the scene of bitter fighting on July 1, 1863. The identity of this soldier and the army in which he served could not be readily identified during the archaeological excavation of the remains, but some battle experts believe he fought for the Confederacy and was most likely a Mississippi soldier.

For further information on the Confederate dead at Gettysburg, we recommend the book *Wasted Valor: The Confederate Dead at Gettysburg* by Gregory A. Coco (Thomas Publications, Gettysburg, PA, 1990) For further information on the Soldiers’ National Cemetery, refer to *Lincoln and the Human Interest Stories of The Gettysburg National Cemetery* by Jim Cole and Roy Frampton (Sheridan Press, Hanover, PA, 1995).

-Clyde Bell, Supervisory Park Ranger

<http://npsgnmp.wordpress.com/2012/07/26/what-happened-to-gettysburgs-confederate-dead/>

## **The Forgotten: Confederate Soldiers Who Died at Gettysburg**

By Gettysburg Reb

One of the saddest and unfortunate aspects of the Battle of Gettysburg was the way the Confederate dead were handled. Unless buried by their comrades, the dead were carelessly buried in shallow graves, with just enough dirt to cover the bodies. No attempt was made by the Union soldiers that did the interment to identify the bodies. The Union dead were buried quickly after the battle, but in many cases the Confederate dead were left unburied for days. When the rebel dead was buried, usually a shallow trench was dug and the bodies just rolled into it, in many cases multiple bodies in the same trench.

The lucky ones maybe had a piece of board with their name and unit penciled on it, but these were few compared with the number killed. Union General George G. Meade gave the numeration of Confederate burials as 2,954 officers and men.[1] Many a Southern Mother, Father, Wife or loved one waited with much distress and heartache for news of their soldiers' fate, only to never hear about their loved one, knowing only that he fell somewhere in the area of a small town in Pennsylvania. We can only begin to understand what those people went through, if we reflect on how we would feel if our sons or brothers were missing and never heard of again, knowing that they lay somewhere in a cold forgotten grave.

The Confederates laid on Gettysburg battlefield for more than 10 years before being moved back to their home states in the South. If it wasn't for the efforts of Dr. John W.C. O'Neal and Dr. Rufus B. Weaver, this might have never taken place.

Dr. O'Neal was born in Virginia in April, 1821 and was 42 years old at the time of the battle. He attended college in Gettysburg and in Maryland, receiving his medical degree in 1844. He practiced medicine in the local area, and then

moved to Baltimore with his wife Ellen in 1850. February of 1863, Dr O'Neal moved to Gettysburg where he was appointed as Adams County's official physician.

Dr Rufus B. Weaver was the son of Samuel Weaver, who was hired to oversee the exhuming of the Union bodies to be removed to the National Cemetery. In 1862 Dr Weaver graduated from the Pennsylvania College and in 1865 obtained his Master of Arts Degree. He received medical education during the period of 1868 through 1870 from the University of Pennsylvania and Jefferson Medical College.

Dr. O'Neal kept a list of the names of the dead as he found them on the battlefield and their locations. Unfortunately most of Dr O'Neal's private papers are missing, but a few letters still exist that were written by him to people about the recovery of Confederate remains. Around Jun 23, 1866, he had published in the Gettysburg Newspaper, the Compiler, a revised list of approximately 600 names and units. His list contains many errors, not his fault, but caused by the poor way the bodies were buried and marked. Many of the names had faded from view during the three years prior to Dr. O'Neal's efforts to list them.

Many Southern Societies raised money and pressured the state government to remove the dead from the battlefield and return them to the South. In 1870 Samuel Weaver met with some of the ladies from Charleston, South Carolina and Baltimore to plan for the removal of the Confederate Dead. But before he had a chance to put the plan into action he was killed in a railroad accident. The ladies then turned to Samuel Weaver's son, Dr. Rufus Weaver for help.

In 1871, Dr Weaver began to collect the remains of the dead and ship them south. In 1871 he shipped 385 skeletons. This was very hard work for Dr. Weaver to collect these bodies; he frequently worked 15 to 20 hours a day, in hot and dirty conditions. He personally supervised opening of each grave and handled the remains himself. One deplorable fact was that some landowners refused to allow the bodies to be removed without being paid in cash. One example of how greedy some people were was the case of LtCol David Winn, 4th Georgia. He was buried on V. Oliver Blocher's farm and Blocher kept for himself a gold plate and teeth from the officer's skull. He would not let Winn's family have the dental set unless he was paid ten dollars. After making several futile trips to see Blocher and his father, David, to attempt to persuade them to give up the gold plate, Dr Weaver finally relented and paid five dollars to close the deal.[2] One good ending to this story is that the press found out about what Blocher did and really laid it to them calling them, "foul, faithless wretche(s), barbaric and unprincipled greediness and vile scum of humanity".

It cost Dr Weaver about \$3.25 per body. From April 19 to September 10 and April 9 to October 3, 1873 he along with his team opened graves and recovered the bodies. Some of the burial trenches had as many as 40 bodies in them, many of the individual bones becoming tangled up in the rotting uniforms and roots of trees and plants. Dr. Weaver had sent over 2,200 bodies south and never collected the total amount due him. He was paid \$2,800 and was still owed over \$6,000. Before he died on July 14, 1936, he was able to collect a portion of the remaining amount.

The treatment of the Confederate Dead had wide ranging affect, especially in the South, even some people in the North did not agree with the way the dead were handled. J. Howard Wert, a citizen of Adams County said "Alas! in how many Southern homes aching hearts waited through weary months for news of loved ones that never came until the void of suspense was replaced by the real certainty that the absent one had helped to swell the unknown dead of the Wheatfield, the Peach Orchard, or the Devil's Den of a Northern land.[3]

J. Howard Wert goes on to say "At one point, in a field at the edge of the Devil's Den woods, I found 156 Confederates buried together - that is 156 Confederates had been laid, side by side, in four parallel rows of 39 each, and a little earth had been thrown over them from different sides, through which after the ground had been settled by a heavy rain, appeared shoes, and hats, and locks of hair and portions of the bodies.[4]

The sight and smell of the of the dead bodies, some of them that laid out in the hot sun for days after the battle is incomprehensible to us to even try to understand. Even though they were the enemy, they were still Americans and should have been given the decency they deserved.

The question still remains today, is there bodies still buried on the battlefield? The answer is yes; bodies have been found in the town of Gettysburg and out on the battlefield, the latest being found in the Railroad Cut in 1996. In a letter to the Northern Neck News, April 7, 1882, part of the letter states "During last summer a gentleman who lives on a part of the battlefield of Gettysburg found on his farm the remains of eighteen or twenty Confederates soldiers, which was turned up by his plowmen." [5] After researching the files of GNMP, I found many letters and correspondence on the finding of bodies on the battlefield and in the town of Gettysburg.

A woman seeing the field for the first time in 1894 stated "Besides, one may guess how many soldiers still rest where they fell. In some cases all traces were lost of the shallow trenches and scant graves into which the bodies of brave men were, perforce, hastily rolled, after lying for days unburied, beneath a July sun. In that time of triumph and desolation, inextricable confusion and terrible suffering, the wounded demanded the chief care and burial was rather for the sake of the living than of the dead." [6]

Gettysburg saw some of the heaviest fighting of the Civil War, the civilians, the soldiers of both sides experienced incidents that most of us can only vaguely begin to understand. For those who died so far away from their home, and remained in a nameless and forgotten grave for ten years or more, they now rest in peace at home. For those that remain where they fell and are in a lost grave, known only to God, may they find peace.

[1] [Wasted Valor - The Confederate Dead at Gettysburg by Gregory A. Coco](#)

[2] [Gettysburg's Confederate Dead by Gregory A. Coco](#)

[3] [Wasted Valor - The Confederate Dead at Gettysburg by Gregory A. Coco](#)

[4] [Wasted Valor - The Confederate Dead at Gettysburg by Gregory A. Coco](#)

[5] [Letter Copied by Writer From the Files of GNMP](#)

[6] [A Strange and Blighted Land - Gettysburg: The Aftermath of a Battle by Gregory A. Coco](#)



Retired AF MSgt, Retired State Gov Worker, interested in the Civil War History especially the Battle of Gettysburg. Love taking pictures and book collection.

Gettysburg Reb

<http://voices.yahoo.com/the-forgotten-confederate-soldiers-died-gettysburg-1325539.html>

# The Removal of the Confederate Dead from Gettysburg

June 25, 2012 by [Gatehouse Press](#)

<http://www.gatehouse-press.com/?p=1645>

<http://www.gatehouse-press.com/?p=1662>

## Confederate dead on the Rose farm

Today, 150 years after the Civil War, there are countless remains of soldiers buried on battle sites around the country. For many, a shallow grave near where they fell was the best they could hope for as an eternal resting place. The



numbers were simply too great for much more than that.

Some, however, were returned to more familiar ground to spend eternity. This was usually done one soldier at a time by family members who saw to their loved one's return. After the Battle of Gettysburg, though, there was a mass removal of Confederate dead from the battlefield to have their remains returned to the South.

The following article, detailing the removal of the Confederate dead, was originally published in Issue 2 of *The Gettysburg Magazine* in January 1990.

## **The Removal of the Confederate Dead From Gettysburg**

by Edward G. J. Richter

In shallow graves, in trenches, and in what were described as "pits," the Confederate dead from the fighting at Gettysburg and vicinity lay buried. At one time, there were more than 3,300 of them resting there, but today they are gone, and sleep in the soil of their beloved Southland. This is the story of the removal of their remains to the South.

To understand the overwhelming nature of the work involved in the removal, we must first look into the circumstances and conditions of the original burials. Many of these dead had been killed outright or had died on the field of their wounds before they could be removed to a hospital, and were buried on the battlefield. Hundreds of others had died at their division or brigade hospitals, or at Union hospitals after their capture, and were buried there. Some had died in the cavalry actions at Hunterstown and Fairfield. A few more were killed or mortally wounded in the rearguard skirmishes at Fairfield and Monterey Gap as the Army of Northern Virginia withdrew over South Mountain into Maryland.

Of these Confederate dead, 1,100 were buried in marked graves and their location recorded by two Gettysburg residents, Dr. J. W. C. O'Neal and Mr. Samuel Weaver. Dr. O'Neal made a second listing in May, 1866 of Confederate graves still marked. In some cases they had been buried and their graves carefully marked with headboards by loving friends and comrades. Those buried at the various Confederate or Union hospitals also, for the most part, had their graves marked. The majority, however, were hastily buried by details from their own army or the Union army, and the graves were unmarked. Over the years from 1863 to 1871, many of these graves lost their identity, some graves being leveled or ploughed over by farmers on whose land they were located.

During the period October 27, 1863, to March 18, 1864, Mr. Samuel Weaver superintended the exhuming and removal of the Union dead to the Soldiers' National Cemetery at Gettysburg. He also at that time examined the graves of more than 3,000 Confederate dead. He was able to identify the remains as those of Confederate soldiers by the burial locations, and then by the color, gray or brown, and the material, cotton, of the uniforms, the style of the shoes, and even by the undershirts, all of which were different than those of the Union soldiers. He stated that it was his belief that not one mistake had been made in determining to which army the deceased soldiers had belonged. At this time he found that those bodies improperly covered and exposed to the elements or buried in well drained soil, had decomposed rapidly. Those buried in heavy soil, or other areas such as marshes, with little or no drainage, were still well preserved. By 1871, all had probably been reduced to skeletal remains.

Probably the first body of a Confederate soldier removed from Gettysburg was that of Col. Isaac E. Avery, 6th North Carolina, commanding Hoke's Brigade of Early's Division. He had been mortally wounded on July 2 in the attack on Cemetery Hill, and had died on July 3. His body was carried back to Williamsport, Maryland, and buried in the Public Burial Ground there. His remains were later removed to Washington Cemetery, the Confederate section within Rose Hill Cemetery at Hagerstown, Maryland, and buried there in a marked grave in the North Carolina section.

The body of Maj. Benjamin Watkins Leigh, Assistant Adjutant General of Johnson's Division, who was killed on July 3 in the attack on Culp's Hill, may be buried with the unknown Union dead in the National Cemetery at Gettysburg. He was originally buried in a marked grave on Culp's Hill near some Union graves. In O'Neal's list of Confederate graves still marked in May, 1866 this burial is not shown. In "A list of articles taken from the bodies of the soldiers removed to the National Cemetery," in the "Unknown section," is listed "B. W. Leigh, \$10, Reb money."

During the years 1863-1871, the bodies of several high ranking Confederate officers, and a few others, were removed from Gettysburg individually. The bodies of Brig. Gen. Lewis A. Armistead, commanding a brigade in Pickett's Division, and Col. Lewis B. Williams, Jr., 1st Virginia, both mortally wounded and captured on July 3 in Pickett's Charge, were shipped in 1863 to friends in Baltimore. The body of Brig. Gen. William Barksdale, commanding a brigade in McLaws's Division, mortally wounded and captured on July 2, was also removed individually. Another body, that of Col. John Bowie Magruder, 57th Virginia, who was also mortally wounded on July 3 in Pickett's Charge and captured, was placed in a metallic coffin and sent to his father in Richmond under a flag of truce by a fraternity brother. One body, that of Col. John A. Jones, 20th Georgia, who was killed on July 2 in the fighting near Devil's Den, and buried originally on Snyder's farm, was removed and lost at sea. Until 1871, however, most of the Confederate dead still lay buried in their temporary graves at and near Gettysburg.

Soon after the end of hostilities in 1865, Ladies Memorial Associations were formed throughout the South. Their purpose was to honor the Confederate dead, to locate and identify their graves, and to make certain that the graves were properly cared for. Despite the chaotic conditions and destitution in much of the South after the war, these ladies were undaunted in their efforts. They faced lack of funds, unfriendly and uncooperating Federal and state governments, at least at the beginning, but they persevered in their determination to honor their dead. They were the embodiment of the most noble virtues of Southern womanhood. It was felt in the South, that the Confederate dead buried in Pennsylvania were in an unfriendly country, where in life and in death they were considered rebels and their sacrifice for their cause was looked upon with disdain.

Originally the Ladies Memorial Associations contracted with Mr. Samuel Weaver of Gettysburg, who had superintended the removal of the Union dead to the Soldiers' National Cemetery, for the work. It was felt that Mr. Weaver was sympathetic towards the Confederate dead. Before the work could be started however, Mr. Weaver died and his son, Dr. Rufus B. Weaver, took over the contract. There were some obstacles in the way of obtaining permission to remove the remains from certain places, some farmers even demanding payment to release the remains. But the determination of the ladies prevailed, and permission was finally granted, in one case with the help of the farmer's wife, before the work could begin.



### **Confederate dead on the Rose farm**



This is part 2 of the article by Edward G. J. Richter, first published in Issue 2 of *The Gettysburg Magazine*. Part 1 was posted Monday, June 25.

Dr. Weaver was particularly well suited for the monumental task before him. In 1865 he had received his degree of Doctor of Medicine and in 1870 was appointed Demonstrator of Anatomy at Hahnemann Medical College, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. Since his childhood he had a keen interest in anatomy, and he brought his skill and interest to his work. His knowledge in the field of anatomy enabled him to identify many sets of remains, especially where the nature of the soldiers' wounds was known and where the bones had been involved. In some cases he had hospital records available to him and he was able to match the wounds described with the skeletal remains.

During the years 1870-1873, Dr. Weaver exhumed, boxed and shipped 3,320 sets of remains of Confederate soldiers from Gettysburg to the South. Of these, 73 were individual removals and 3,247 were shipped to the various Ladies Memorial Associations, as follows:

### **Dr. Rufus B. Weaver**

**Ladies Memorial Association of Charleston, South Carolina—74 remains**  
**Ladies Memorial Association of Savannah, Georgia—101 remains**  
**Wake County Ladies Memorial Association, Raleigh, North Carolina—137 remains**  
**Hollywood Memorial Association, Richmond, Virginia—2,935 remains**

Of the 73 individual removals, it is not certain if that includes all such removals, or only those removed by Dr. Weaver. It is certain though that the vast majority of Confederate remains removed from Gettysburg and vicinity were removed by Dr. Weaver.

On May 10, 1871, Confederate Memorial Day, the remains of 70 South Carolinians removed from Gettysburg, and 10 removed from the hospital cemetery at Chester, Pennsylvania, were reinterred in Magnolia Cemetery, Charleston, South Carolina. The remains of 4 others had also been removed from Gettysburg but apparently had been buried elsewhere, as their identity and location of original burial was not recorded. They were buried in 63 individual graves, one containing 2 bodies, and 16 were buried in 2 large graves.

On August 21, 1871, 32 sets of remains, and on September 24, 1871, 69 sets of remains, of Georgians removed from Gettysburg were reinterred at Laurel Grove Cemetery, Savannah, Georgia. Two of these were buried in individual graves, and 99 were buried in 8 large graves.

On June 16, 1871, the Wake County North Carolina Ladies Memorial Association voted to remove North Carolina dead from Gettysburg and by Oct. 1, 1871, 137 sets of remains were reinterred in the Confederate section of Oakwood Cemetery, Raleigh, North Carolina. There were 119 of these dead buried in separate graves, and 18 others in 2 large graves.

In 1872 Dr. Weaver commenced the exhuming, boxing and shipping of the remaining Confederate dead to Hollywood Cemetery, Richmond, Virginia. He was employed in this work from April 19 to September 10, 1872, and from April 9 to October 3, 1873. Before daybreak on each working day, Dr. Weaver and his men were out on the field. He personally superintended all of the work, and once a grave was opened, he removed all of the bones himself, considering each fragment an “important and sacred” part of the remains. He felt that only a person with a knowledge of anatomy could do this properly and completely. He then carefully packed the remains in boxes. At dark he would return home with, as he stated, his “precious freight,” and after dinner often work until midnight labeling the remains and completing his records for the day. He usually worked 18-20 hours a day, feeling that the work had to be completed then or never. Thirty years later his health was still affected by these long hours and his exposure to the elements.

After the exhumation, the remains were boxed and shipped in 3 categories. First, where the remains could be positively identified individually, they were placed in separate small boxes and numbered consecutively. In a few cases, where 2 bodies had been in the same grave, they were shipped together in one box. Secondly, where remains could be identified as being part of a group of remains, but where the individual identification was no longer possible, they were shipped in large boxes. These large boxes usually contained from 8 to 14 sets of remains each, and where the names of some of the soldiers whose remains were contained therein were known, they were listed in Dr. Weaver’s records. These large boxes were marked with a letter of the alphabet, all of the boxes in one shipment from the same location having the same letter. The third category were those shipped in large boxes whose identity was unknown.

The remains were sent from Gettysburg to Hollywood Cemetery in 6 shipments, 313 in separate, small boxes and 2,622 in large boxes, as follows:

**Shipment No. 1—June 13, 1872—708 remains.**

**Shipment No. 2—August 3, 1872—882 remains.**

**Shipment No. 3—September 10, 1872—683 remains.**

**Shipment No. 4—May 17, 1873—333 remains.**

**Shipment No. 5—June 28, 1873—256 remains.**

**Shipment No. 6—October 11, 1873—73 remains.**

**Total—2,935 remains.**



**Marker for Confederate dead buried in Hollywood Cemetery**

The total cost of the removals to Hollywood Cemetery was \$9,536. In 1872 and 1873 Dr. Weaver was paid \$3,180. As late as 1892, 20 years later, Dr. Weaver, who had paid much of these expenses out of his own funds, still had not been paid and was seeking help in receiving reimbursement.

The remains shipped from Gettysburg had been exhumed from at least 96 different locations, and there were at least 19 other places where there were known Confederate burials but no record of removal. Of the Confederate dead, whose graves had been originally marked and recorded by Dr. O’Neal and Mr. Weaver, there were 230 of whom no record of their removal from Gettysburg could be found. Unfortunately, the records of the last 2 shipments to Hollywood Cemetery were not available, and attempts to locate them to date have been futile. Many were probably included in the last 2 shipments. Many others were probably removed individually, and some were removed among the unknown. Occasionally, in the years since 1873, the remains or partial remains of a Confederate soldier have been found at Gettysburg. One was exhumed in the area where the dead from the Pickett-Pettigrew Charge had been buried and was removed and reinterred in Rose Hill Cemetery, Hagerstown, Maryland. There may be a few who still lay in unknown graves at Gettysburg.

The work was completed, the remains exhumed, examined, boxed, labeled, shipped, and reinterred in the South. The Confederate soldiers who had paid the supreme price for their cause at Gettysburg had come home. Their graves in the Southern cemeteries were marked with headstones, the grounds carefully prepared and maintained, and monuments raised and dedicated in their honor. This accomplishment was a tribute to the ladies of the various Memorial Associations who had arranged and paid for the removals, acquired suitable burial places, and saw that the graves were properly marked and cared for. It was an honor to Dr. Weaver, to whom this was not just a task, but a sacred trust. His efforts had ensured that this monumental task was properly carried out, through his skill, dedication and sacrifice.

[About the Author:](#) The author is a retired lieutenant from the Nassau County, New York Police Department, having served for 33 years. He served in the U.S. Army Infantry for three years prior to that.

"Petersburg Daily Index" (Petersburg, Virginia), 13 October 1869, page 1:

## **An Appeal for the Removal of the Confederate Dead at Gettysburg.**

By correspondence and other means it has been brought to the special attention of the Hollywood Memorial Association of Richmond that over three thousand Confederate soldiers are buried on and near the battle field of Gettysburg.

David Wills, Esq., President of the National Cemetery company says in a letter to General Fitzhugh Lee: "There has never been any action by the Board of Managers of the Soldiers' National Cemetery Company here in reference to the disposition of the remains of the Southern dead lying on this battle field. Neither is there any action contemplated. The charter of the Association provides only for the interment of the remains of those who fell in defense of the Union.

"There should be something done with the remains of the Southern Soldiers. There are about 600 marked graves, and these are fast becoming obliterated. Their names might be preserved, and the remains gathered together into a cemetery or burying ground, if any one would take the matter in hand."

**Their trusted chief, General R.E. Lee, whom they followed, and fighting under whose leadership they fell, approves the plan of removing their bodies to our own soil.**

The Hollywood Memorial Association have the disposition to undertake this work, but do not possess the ability unless generously aided by friends throughout the South. They offer ample grounds in their cemetery, and also the aid of their association to prosecute the work, should it be found practicable to remove the bodies to Richmond.

To accomplish this purpose means must be raised by the earnest efforts of the survivors of the Confederate army, the mothers and sisters, the fathers, and brothers, and friends of the slain. Every Southern State has representatives at Gettysburg. Will not the active men and women, in every city, and town, and county, at once volunteer to collect and send contributions?

**In this way we may gather those  
"Who bore the flag of our nation's trust  
And fell in the cause, though lost, still just  
Gather the corpses strewn  
O'er many a battle plain,  
From many a grat that lies so lone,  
Without a name and without a stone,  
Gather the Southern slain."**

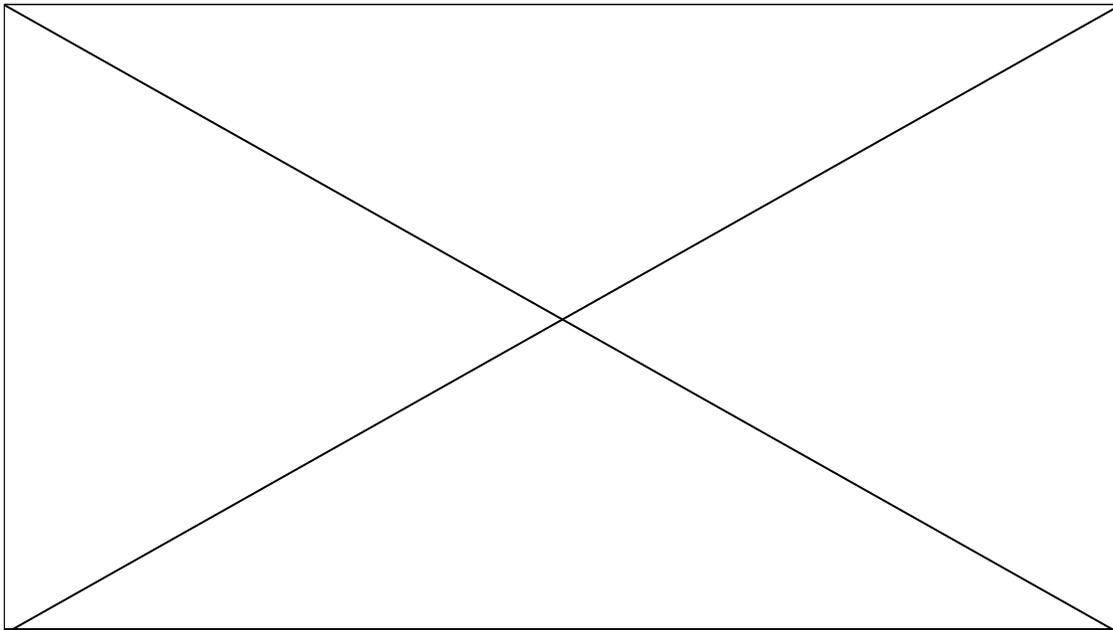
Mrs. Geo. W. Randolph,  
Mrs. R.E. Lee,  
Mrs. J.L.M. Curry.

Communications and remittances may be sent to Mrs. G.W. Randolph, Richmond, Va.

Southern papers are respectfully requested to copy this appeal at once, and urge its claims upon the generous public

# Ten thousand people take part in re-enactment of Battle of Gettysburg

Re-enactors fire the opening volley, starting the commemoration of the Battle of Gettysburg, one of the most violent of the American Civil War.



View Video: <http://www.telegraph.co.uk/history/10150071/Ten-thousand-people-take-part-in-re-enactment-of-Battle-of-Gettysburg.html>

---

1:43PM BST 29 Jun 2013

More than 160,000 men fought at Gettysburg from July 1-3, 1863. Around 8,000 Union and Confederacy soldiers lost their lives over the three days as they fought in and around the Pennsylvania town, with tens of thousands wounded.

The battle is often described as the turning point of the war, when the Union ended Confederate Gen Robert E Lee's invasion of the north.

Four months later, President Abraham Lincoln honoured the fallen at a cemetery in the town and delivered the Gettysburg Address, in which he redefined the purpose of the war.

While the Blue Gray Alliance re-enactment does not have the same number of soldiers involved as the original battle, everything else is being made as authentic as possible.

The Cooper family has been taking part in Civil War re-enactments for three years. "This is the largest one we have ever attended. It might make the records, I'm not sure but I think it's going to be pretty close," said Colleen Cooper.

The history of Gettysburg was enough to tempt several Swedish war enthusiasts here too.

"What I look most forward to is the battle," said Tobias Lendstrom.

"Back home we have four guns, here they have over 80 cannons so it's going to be a huge, feeling the booms in the ground."

At a re-enactment meant to tell the story of a conflict between slave states and free states, you might not expect to see many African American participants, but Marvin Greer enjoys taking part.

"There's not a lot of African-American re-enactors in general. At this event there are five or six of us out here. Most of us are doing civilian but some others are doing other impressions," he said.

With temperatures pushing 100 degrees, many would be hunting for air conditioning, but these hardy participants dressed in thick wool, just keep charging.

The official anniversary of the Battle of Gettysburg is 1 July 2013.

Another large scale re-enactment is planned to take place from 1 to 3 July 2013.

About 200,000 people are expected to visit the town, during a ten-day period.

*Source: APTN*



<http://www.telegraph.co.uk/history/10150071/Ten-thousand-people-take-part-in-re-enactment-of-Battle-of-Gettysburg.html>

# The Myth of Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain



**Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain**

I can't help but be amazed at the people that still proclaim Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain the hero of Gettysburg. I understand that all men who fought well in that war were heroes, but what made Chamberlain the hero he is today? Let's take a look at one of my favorite books called *These Honored Dead* by Thomas Desjardin. He covers many of the misled beliefs dealing with the Battle of Gettysburg and what caused these beliefs to become so ingrained in our history.

Desjardin tells us how Ken Burns is the man that made the legend of Chamberlain what it is today. The famous charge that Burns portrays Chamberlain as ordering never occurred. Desjardin says, "Even that in his lifetime Chamberlain repeatedly denied ordering a charge."

He goes on to say, "To say that Chamberlain saved the Union Army at Gettysburg is to ignore the 15,000 or more men held in reserve in close proximity to Little Round Top." Basically speaking, Ken Burns hollywooded up the film to make Chamberlain the hero that he wanted him to be. Because of Ken Burns and the movie *Gettysburg* based on the Michael Shaara book *The Killer Angels*, Chamberlain is so often used in sermons and classrooms as a great American hero. So what are the facts of Chamberlain and his fight at Gettysburg?



**Because no one has been able to understand what type of hat Chamberlain wore at Gettysburg, he has been depicted in every painting as being without a hat, another myth dealing with Chamberlain and Gettysburg.**

Even further is the point that Chamberlain had been promoted to colonel the day before the battle, making him the lowest colonel in seniority in the entire Federal Army of around 90,000 men. He was extremely sick at Gettysburg, running

a fever because of malaria and with chronic diarrhea. Nothing like what people who watched the movie picture him like today.

Desjardin goes further with the legend of Chamberlain. He says, "Legend tells us - five regiments of Confederates had fled in its path (20th Maine), leaving four or five hundred prisoners in Chamberlain's care, among them some of the most battle hardened men in Lee's army. The truth of the matter is that Chamberlain was attacked by one regiment, the 15th Alabama Infantry commanded by Colonel William C. Oates. So how many men did Oates lose in the fight with Chamberlain?"

When we break down the numbers, Oates Alabama regiment lost 167 men. That number includes killed, wounded, and captured. That number is far short of the 400 prisoners of legend. The 47th Alabama (the 15th Alabama was the extreme right of the line there was no regiment to it's right), to the left of the 15th Alabama had only lost 64 men in killed, wounded, and captured. If you were to say all these casualties were captured, which is ridiculous because Oates said the blood of the dead and dying stood in puddles on the rocks, you still don't have 400 prisoners captured by Chamberlain, but 231. How many men attacked Chamberlain's position?



**William C. Oates**

We know that William C. Oates claimed he entered the fight at Gettysburg with 644 men, but since that time we know he had just a little over half that figure. Most historians believe Oates miscalculated his strength because he was in an argument with his corps commander Lieutenant General James Longstreet. Witnesses to the fight have all called his 644 man regiment theory as ridiculous. Most historians believe the number to be between 380 men to 400 men at most, a few say as much as 500, but witnesses claim this number too high. How many men did Chamberlain have?

Joshua Lawrence Chamberlain the newly promoted colonel had about 358 men at Gettysburg. He wouldn't have had but about 250 had not the rebellious members of the 2nd Maine joined his ranks. I say joined, they were forced into his ranks and increased his numbers. So how many men were left when the fighting ended? My wife heard a man tonight claim that Chamberlain began the battle with a thousand men and ended the battle with 80 men and captured 400 prisoners. Let's find the true answer.

Of the 358 men engaged, protected by a stone wall against a regiment of about equal numbers only lost 130 killed and wounded. William Oates said that he ordered his men to retreat when the fighting eased up because of heavy casualties and lack of ammunition. His men had marched about 20 miles that morning to reach the field and had sent part of the regiment with canteens to obtain water because they were out. These men didn't return with the canteens in time, so Oates men entered the fight without water on an extremely hot July day. The number that Chamberlain claimed he had captured were about 50 men and those were the wounded that could not escape.

What truly made Chamberlain a Civil War hero? He lived until 1914, almost 49 years after the war ended and during that long period of time, he wrote about all his great exploits and how he saved the day at Gettysburg on July 2, 1863. He took 400 men and defeated a 400 man Confederate regiment that would have rolled up the Federal flank if they had broken through, although there were 15,000 Federal reserves in the vicinity. I'll buy that if you'll buy my nice ocean front property in Wyoming.

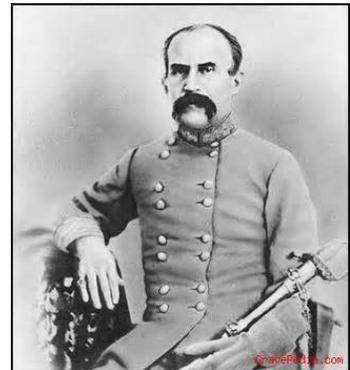
<http://trrcobb.blogspot.com/2013/02/the-myth-of-joshua-lawrence-chamberlain.html>.

# Confederate Generals of Gettysburg: The Leaders of America's Greatest Battle

## Major General Isaac Ridgeway Trimble

**CONFEDERATE THIRD CORPS,  
PENDER'S DIVISION  
16 guns/6,645 men**

**a series...**



At sixty-one Isaac Trimble was one of the oldest generals on either side at Gettysburg, yet the huge, scowling, martial mustache that blazed across his face advertised the fact that behind it was one of the most pugnacious commanders on the field. On battlefield after battlefield in 1862 he had driven himself and his brigade past the limits of their comrades, making him a favorite with his legendarily relentless commander, "Stonewall" Jackson. Stoking his inner fire was naked ambition: "Before this war is over," he had told a delighted Jackson, "I intend to be a major general or a corpse."

Trimble was a restless soul, a Culpeper Virginia native who had gone west and been appointed to West Point out of Kentucky, then attached himself to his beloved Maryland. A graduate at the age of twenty, he served in artillery branch of the Old Army for ten years, then in 1832 doffed his uniform and entered the exploding railroad industry, where there was unlimited opportunity for a fiery competitor like himself. In the nearly thirty years before Civil War came in 1861 he engineered construction on a number of railroad lines in the Mid-Atlantic region and became a distinguished superintendent.

In the early weeks of the War Trimble did not sit idly behind his desk. He used his acumen to try bring victory to the South in one quick stroke by burning all the railroad bridges north of his adopted Baltimore, thereby obstructing the passage of Northern troops bound for Washington and rendering the capital defenseless. When that failed and it became clear that Maryland would not secede, he went home to Virginia. In May 1861 he enlisted in the Engineers and went to work constructing battery emplacements. Although Joe Johnston initially had a low regard for his military abilities, Trimble managed to get himself commissioned brigadier general by August and placed with a brigade by November 1861. He waited through the winter on the Rappahannock line.

Trimble's first chance to show what he could do came the next spring in "Stonewall" Jackson's Shenandoah Campaign. He "saw the elephant" in the climax of the campaign at Cross Keys on June 8, 1862. There, out in front on the right side of Ewell's line, he drew an attack by Maj. Gen. John C. Fremont's Federals. Trimble ordered his men to wait until the last possible second to fire. The entire brigade then blasted a volley into the faces of the Yankees, who staggered, then turned and ran. When they didn't return, Trimble was irked. He went after them, and advanced until he was a mile ahead of the other Confederate brigades. Not yet content, he insisted heatedly on a further attack. Ewell refused his request but remembered his ardor: "Trimble won the fight," he would confide later, "and I believe now if I had followed his views we would have destroyed Fremont's army."

To the men Trimble appeared old and cranky, with an eccentricity of dress which made him right at home in the command of the spectacularly eccentric Maj. Gens. "Stonewall" Jackson and "Old Baldy" Ewell. Once, when someone mentioned the subject of "fancy soldiers," Jackson pointed to Trimble, "sitting on the fence, with black army hat, cord and feathers, [and said] 'There is the only fancy soldier in

my command.'" Another distinguishing feature was his bull voice. One of his men remembered, "Trimble gave the loudest command I ever heard, to 'Forward, guide center, march!' I could hear the echo . . . for miles."

At Gaines' Mill, Trimble's next battle, he showed more of the same spirit in attack as Cross Keys. At Malvern Hill, he vainly begged asked Jackson to let him make a night assault, unwilling to give up without one more effort where 5,000 Confederates already lay crumpled on the ground.

Jackson's command proceeded immediately from the Peninsula to face the threat of Maj. Gen. John Pope's army to the northwest. There, in the early stages of the Second Manassas Campaign, Trimble routed one Federal brigade at Freeman's Ford on the banks of the Rappahannock. Later, after Jackson had mercilessly driven his flying column around Pope's army and into his rear, Trimble volunteered his exhausted brigade for one more march to the Federal supply depot at Manassas Junction. Jackson gratefully accepted. Trimble's men, numbed with lack of sleep, aching and foot-weary, made the extra march, then rushed forward and captured two Federal batteries at the end of it. In September, after Trimble was wounded in the Battle of Second Manassas (hit above the left ankle by an explosive bullet), Jackson remembered, and wrote:

I respectfully recommend that Brig. Gen. I.R. Trimble be appointed a Maj. Gen. It is proper, in this connection, to state that I do not regard him as a good disciplinarian, but his success in battle has induced me to recommend his promotion. I will mention but one instance, though several might be named, in which he rendered distinguished service. After a day's march of over 30 miles he ordered his command . . . to charge the enemy's position at Manassas Junction. This charge resulted in the capture of a number of prisoners and 8 pieces of Artillery. I regard that day's achievement as the most brilliant that has come under my observation during the present war."

The trouble was, according to law Trimble could not be promoted or assigned to command a division until he was well enough to serve with troops. Here, finally, his age disadvantaged him--his wound developed infections and complications, and he healed slowly. True to form, Trimble went on the offensive from his sickbed, writing enraged letters to the Adjutant General and Secretary of War, demanding his promotion at once. The letters and demands bore fruit. On January 19, 1863, Trimble was promoted to major general and given command of Jackson's Stonewall Division, though he had still not recovered. In fact, in April he fell sick again, and Maj. Gen. "Allegheny" Johnson was given Jackson's division after the Battle of Chancellorsville in May. Meanwhile, Trimble was given command of the quiet (Shenandoah) Valley District.

When Lee's army marched across the Potomac a few weeks later, however, Trimble could not remain in his quiet backwater when battle was promised in Maryland or Pennsylvania--an area he knew like the back of his hand from his railroading days. He rode north, joined Lee in the third week of June, and after he wore out his welcome at army headquarters, rode further north and joined his old chief, now Lieut. Gen. Ewell, in Carlisle on June 28. He immediately volunteered to take the capital of Pennsylvania--about whose defenses or garrison he knew absolutely nothing--single-handedly, with one brigade! On June 30, however, orders came from Lee for the army to concentrate, and Ewell moved south with the nettlesome Trimble always at his ear.

## At Gettysburg

Trimble accompanied Ewell during the whole of July 1, giving unsolicited advice with the receipt of every order from Lee and at every turn in the road. Trimble's close association with Ewell ended at a stormy

meeting in the late afternoon, after the retreat of the Union Eleventh Corps and after Ewell had received Lee's order to take Cemetery Hill "if practicable" but avoid a general engagement. Trimble then buzzed excitedly, "General, don't you intend to pursue our sweep and push the enemy vigorously?" According to Trimble's later recollection, Ewell only paced about, cited Lee's order not to bring on a general engagement, and looked confused. Trimble urgently advised taking Culp's Hill, which he saw as the key to the whole Union position. "Give me a division," he said, according to one witness, "and I will engage to take that hill." When this was declined, he said, "Give me a brigade and I will do it." When this was declined, Trimble said, "Give me a good regiment and I will engage to take that hill." Ewell snapped back, "When I need advice from a junior officer I generally ask for it." Trimble warned that Ewell would regret following his suggestions for as long as he lived, threw down his sword, and stormed off, saying he would no longer serve under such an officer.

On July 2, Trimble stood by in his status as major-general-at-large.

On July 3, two of Hill's divisions which Lee had earmarked for the climactic charge on the enemy center were without commanding generals. For the attack, Lee assigned Trimble to command Pender's division, where senior Brig. Gen. "Little Jim" Lane had been in charge since Maj. Gen. Dorsey Pender had been wounded the previous afternoon. Trimble probably saw his two attacking brigades for the first time when he and Lee rode along their lines that morning. Trimble's men were put in the third line behind the two lines of Heth's division (now commanded by Brig. Gen. Johnston Pettigrew). Pettigrew's and Trimble's brigades were on the left of Pickett's division, jumping off from a line between McMillan's Woods and Spangler's Woods on the west slope Seminary Ridge.

During the grand assault in mid-afternoon, which became famous as Pickett's Charge, Trimble rode on his mare Jinny. As he crossed the Emmitsburg Road, a bullet smashed his ankle, also wounding his horse. Trimble sent a message to Lane to take charge of the division, which was by then a jumbled mass of men, each following a flag and fighting on his own hook.

This would be Trimble's last moment of active rebellion. He was carried away, and the lower third of his leg was amputated at a farmhouse in the rear. Surgeons warned that infection would set in if he were moved in an ambulance, so Trimble chose to stay and be taken prisoner. He spent the next year and a half in Northern hands, then was exchanged in February 1865. Lee surrendered before he could return to the field.

For further reading:

Grace, William M. "Isaac Trimble, the Indefatigable and Courageous." MA Thesis, VA Polytechnic Inst., 1984

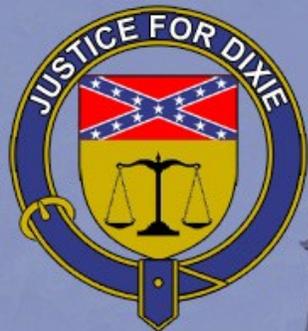
Long, Roger "Gen. Isaac Trimble in Captivity." *Gettysburg Magazine* 1, Jul 1989

Pohanka, Brian, ed., "Gettysburg: Fight Enough in Old Man Trimble to Satisfy a Herd of Tigers: Diary of Isaac Ridgeway Trimble, Division Commander, A.P. Hill's Corps." *Civil War Magazine* 46, Aug 1994

---

Excerpted from ["The Generals of Gettysburg: The Leaders of America's Greatest Battle"](#) by Larry Tagg

**NEXT MONTH: Major General Henry Heth**



# Southern Legal Resource Center

Defending the rights of all Americans  
Advocating for the Confederate community

Follow Us

The Southern Legal Resource Center is a non-profit tax deductible public law and advocacy group dedicated to expanding the inalienable, legal, constitutional and civil rights of all Americans, but especially America's most persecuted minority: Confederate Southern Americans. **SLRC NEEDS OUR HELP !!!**

## Company Overview

Non-profit tax deductible public law corporation founded in 1995, dedicated to preservation of the dwindling rights of all Americans through judicial, legal and social advocacy on behalf of the Confederate community and Confederate Southern Americans.



## Mission

A return to social and constitutional sanity for all Americans and especially for America's most persecuted minority: Confederate Southern Americans.

## Website

<http://www.slrc-csa.org>

<http://slrc-csa.We-Care.com/Start>

<http://slrc-csa.we-care.com>

<https://slrc-csa.org/donate-to-slrc>

SUBSCRIBE TO SLRC NEWSLETTER [HERE](#) (Free)

**Southern Legal Resource  
Center  
P.O. Box 1235  
Black Mountain, NC 28711**

It is your liberty & Southern Heritage (and your children & grandchildren's liberty & heritage) we are fighting for.

**\$35 for Liberty & SLRC membership is a bargain.**

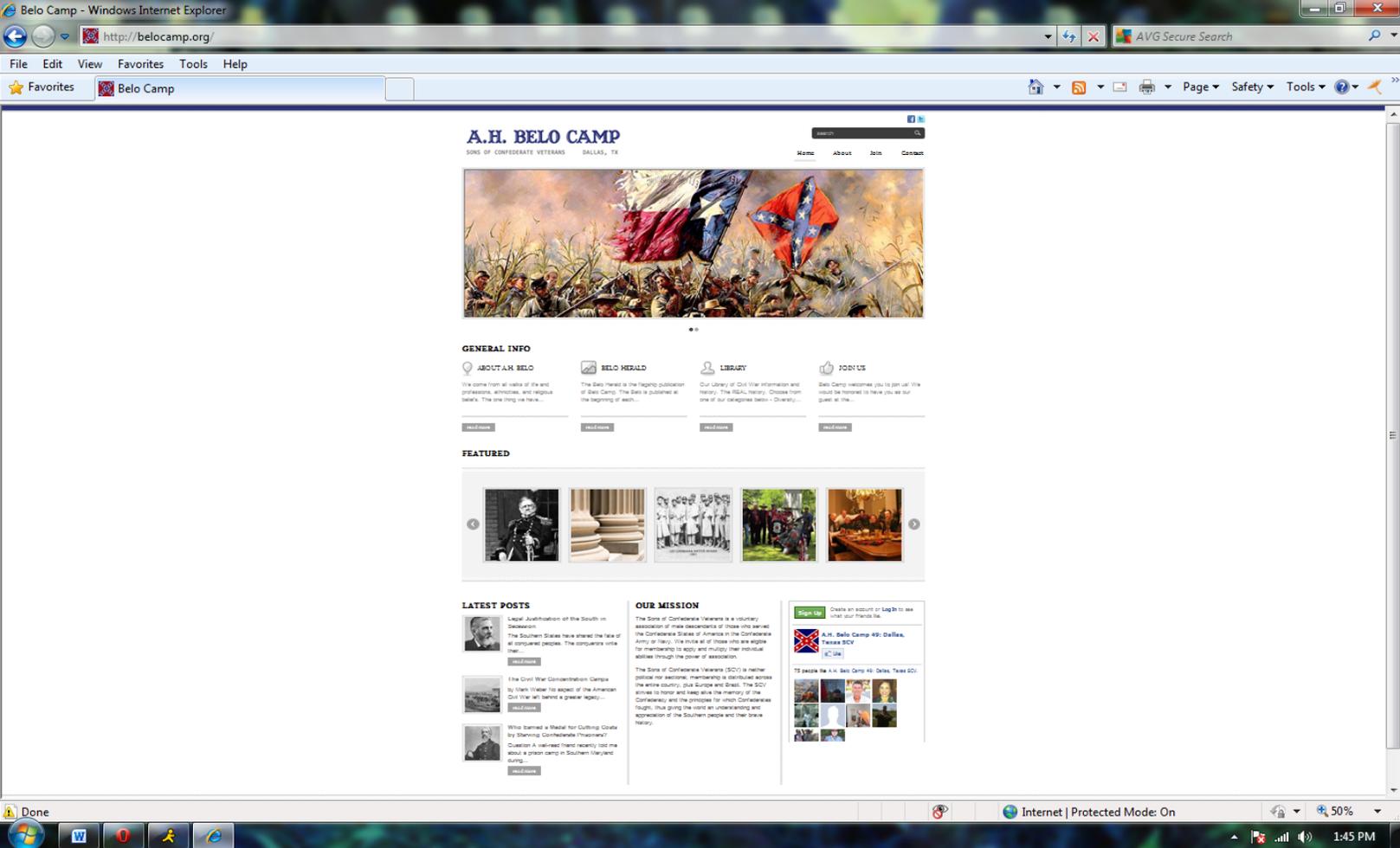
Mail to: P.O.Box 1235 Black Mountain, NC 28711. Or go [HERE](#) to give online.

Follow events on YouTube: ["All Things Confederate"](#)

<https://slrc-csa.org/donate-to-slrc>

Thank you, Kirk D. Lyons, Chief Trial Counsel

# Join SLRC Today !



<http://belocamp.org/>

A.H Belo Camp 49 website is our home on the web and serves to keep our members up to date on camp activities as well as serve as an educational source about the truth of our just cause.

**Visit our website, then check back often to view the latest articles in our growing library on the true history of our great Southron Republic !**

Colonel A.H. Belo was from North Carolina, and participated in Pickett's Charge at Gettysburg. His troops were among the few to reach the stone wall. After the war, he moved to Texas, where he founded both the Galveston Herald and the Dallas Morning News. The Dallas Morning News was established in 1885 by the Galveston News as sort of a North Texas subsidiary. The two papers were linked by 315 miles of telegraph wire and shared a network of correspondents. They were the first two newspapers in the country to print simultaneous editions. The media empire he started now includes radio, publishing, and television. His impact on the early development of Dallas can hardly be overstated.

The Belo Camp 49 Website and the Belo Herald are our unapologetic tributes to his efforts as we seek to bring the truth to our fellow Southrons and others in an age of political correctness and unrepentant yankee lies about our people, our culture, our heritage and our history.

**Sic Semper Tyrannis!!!**

# Sons of Confederate Veterans

"DEFENDING THEIR HONOR SINCE 1896"

[www.scv.org](http://www.scv.org) ★ 1-800-MySouth

## What is the Sons of Confederate Veterans?

The citizen-soldiers who fought for the Confederacy personified the best qualities of America. The preservation of liberty and freedom was the motivating factor in the South's decision to fight the Second American Revolution. The tenacity with which Confederate soldiers fought underscored their belief in the rights guaranteed by the Constitution. These attributes are the underpinning of our democratic society and represent the foundation on which this nation was built.

Today, the Sons of Confederate Veterans is preserving the history and legacy of these heroes, so future generations can understand the motives that animated the Southern Cause.

The SCV is the direct heir of the United Confederate Veterans, and the oldest hereditary organization for male descendants of Confederate soldiers. Organized at Richmond, Virginia in 1896, the SCV continues to serve as a historical, patriotic, and non-political organization dedicated to ensuring that a true history of the 1861-1865 period is preserved.

## Events & Functions

Memorial Services • Monthly Camp Meetings • Annual Reunions • Grave Site Restoration  
Educational Programs • Parades & Festivals • Heritage Defense • Honoring Our Veterans



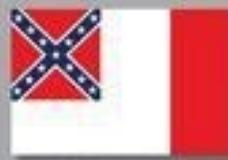
Rattle Flag



1st National Flag



2nd National Flag



3rd National Flag



Bonnie Blue Flag



*They took a stand for us.  
Now, we stand for them.*

*May God bless our efforts to  
Vindicate the Cause of the  
Confederate South.*

Michael Givens  
Commander-in-Chief  
Sons of Confederate Veterans

**NEVER APOLOGIZE**



**FOR BEING RIGHT!**

### About our namesake:

[belo.herald@yahoo.com](mailto:belo.herald@yahoo.com)

Colonel A.H. Belo was from North Carolina, and participated in Pickett's Charge at Gettysburg. His troops were among the few to reach the stone wall. After the war, he moved to Texas, where he founded both the Galveston Herald and the Dallas Morning News. The Dallas Morning News was established in 1885 by the Galveston News as sort of a North Texas subsidiary. The two papers were linked by 315 miles of telegraph wire and shared a network of correspondents. They were the first two newspapers in the country to print simultaneous editions. The media empire he started now includes radio, publishing, and television. His impact on the early development of Dallas can hardly be overstated.

The Belo Herald is our unapologetic tribute to his efforts as we seek to bring the truth to our fellow Southrons and others in an age of political correctness and unrepentant yankee lies about our people, our culture, our heritage and our history.

**Sic Semper Tyrannis!!!**

**Do you have an ancestor that was a Confederate Veteran?**  
**Are you interested in honoring them and their cause?**  
**Do you think that history should reflect the truth?**  
**Are you interested in protecting your heritage and its symbols?**  
**Will you commit to the vindication of the cause for which they fought?**  
**If you answered "Yes" to these questions, then you should "Join Us"**

*Membership in the Sons of Confederate Veterans is open to all male descendants of any veteran who served honorably in the Confederate armed forces regardless of the applicant's or his ancestor's race, religion, or political views.*

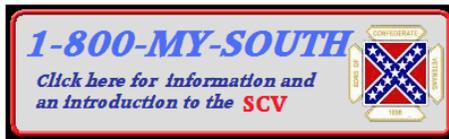
## How Do I Join The Sons of Confederate Veterans?



The SCV is the direct heir of the United Confederate Veterans, and the oldest hereditary organization for male descendants of Confederate soldiers. Organized at Richmond, Virginia in 1896, the SCV continues to serve as a historical, patriotic, and non-political organization dedicated to ensuring that a true history of the 1861-1865 period is preserved.



*Membership in the **Sons of Confederate Veterans** is open to all male descendants of any veteran who served honorably in the Confederate States armed forces and government.*



*Membership can be obtained through either lineal or collateral family lines and kinship to a veteran must be **documented genealogically**. The minimum age for full membership is 12, but there is no minimum for Cadet Membership.*

<http://www.scv.org/genealogy.php>

### CHARGE TO THE SONS OF CONFEDERATE VETERANS

*"To you, Sons of Confederate Veterans, we will commit the vindication of the cause for which we fought. To your strength will be given the defense of the Confederate soldier's good name, the guardianship of his history, the emulation of his virtues, the perpetuation of those principles which he loved and which you love also, and those ideals which made him glorious and which you also cherish." Remember it is your duty to see that the true history of the South is presented to future generations".*

Lt. General Stephen Dill Lee,  
Commander General

**NOTE: In accordance with Title 17 U.S.C. section 107, any copyrighted material herein is distributed without profit or payment to those who have expressed prior interest in receiving this information for non-profit research and educational purposes only. For further information please refer to:**

<http://www.law.cornell.edu/uscode/17/107.shtml>